

Eliza Folkes.

CHRYSALE:

OR, THE
ADVENTURES
OF A
GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited
VIEWS of several striking Scenes,

WITH
Curious and interesting ANECDOTES, of
the most Noted Persons in every Rank
of Life, whose Hands it passed through,

IN
AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY,
and PORTUGAL.

— Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Pressure.

SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

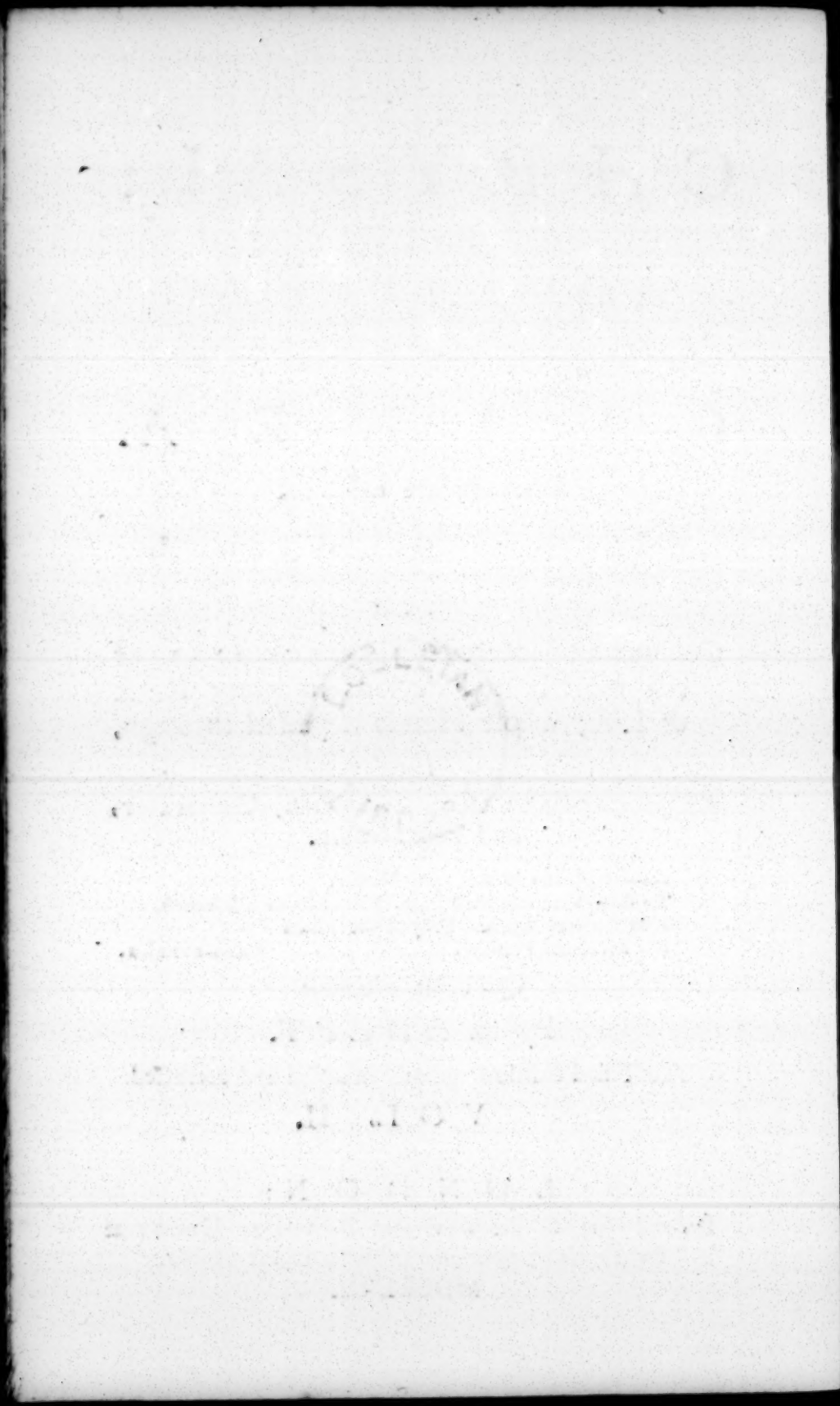
The Third Edition, greatly enlarged and corrected.

VOL. II.

L O N D O N :

Printed for T. BECKET and P. A. DE, HONDT at
Tully's Head, near Surry Street, in the Strand.

MDCCLXII.





THE
CONTENTS
OF THE
SECOND VOLUME.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

SOME remarks on language. Character of
CHRYSAI's new master. CHRYSAI attends
his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady.
Polite reception. P. 1.

CHAP. II.

*A genteel evening. A dream, and a belt, and a
family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's
dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of
the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream. 6*

CHAP. III.

*A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the
astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop's
Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circum-
stances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade
each other to dream that it is true. 13*

VOL. II.

A

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. 20

CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow protestants, in GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character. 25

CHAP. VI.

The true use of court-favour. The Biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather, for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built, instead of an hen-corp; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common: A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields, in an undress. 29

CHAP. VII.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character. 37

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VIII.

*The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace.
Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent.
Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity,
with her tender concern for her friends abroad.* 45

CHAP. VIII.

*CHRYSALE changes his service, for that of an usual
attendant upon the great. The history of the
unfortunate glyster-pipe-maker, who was like to
be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble
imitation of high life. Another change brings
CHRYSALE into the possession of a person of an
extraordinary character. Conversation between
him and a very noted person. Let those laugh
that win.* 50

CHAP. IX.

*CHRYSALE's master starts at his own apparition.
Interview between the Doctor, and a noted ballad-
singer. The history of a famous ballad. All
trades alike.* 58

CHAP. X.

*A venerable Matron compleats the company. The
curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries
made. MOMUS plays successively upon Doctor
HUNCH-BACK, and Mother BRIMSTONE. Af-
ter various disasters, the evening is concluded in
character.* 63

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XI.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation, for her friend. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment, in her visit to the Prison. Her Grace's character. 76

CHAP. XII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. CHRYSAL changes his service for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for an husband. 83

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of the industry, who brings him to an horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences. 91

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAL comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs. 96

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason, for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. **CHRYSA**L enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son. 102

CHAP. XVI.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantick style. **CHRYSA**L quits the service of the general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest **Aminadab**. Conclusion of **Aminadab**'s agency for her Grace. 109

CHAP. XVII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. Political conversation between a **DUTCHMAN** and a **JEW**. They differ in opinion. **AMINADAB** leaves his friend **VAN HOGAN** in great distress. 115

CHAP. XVIII.

AMINADAB bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for **AFRICA**. **CHRYSA**L remains with a **DUTCH** banker. The principles and conscience of a good **DUTCHMAN**. **CHRYSA**L is sent into **GERMANY**. His opinion of the **DUTCH**. 124

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAI's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions. 129

CHAP. XX.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAI is carried to his destined master. 136

CHAP. XXI.

How CHRYSAI found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank. 143

CHAP. XXII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. CHRYSAI is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon. 150

CHAP. XXIII.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained. 154

CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

THE rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to publick justice. 159

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented brings **CHRYSAI** into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the sight of **CHRYSAI**. 164

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle. 169

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. **CHRYSAI** finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger. 174

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined, till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul. 180

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. CHRYSAL changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of BULGARIA, and the probable consequences of the war. 186

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL arrives in VIENNA, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in ENGLAND. He is sent to PERU. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to EUROPE to prepare matters better. 192

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN and PORTUGAL, are to be brought into the war with ENGLAND. He proposes to his brother to join in

CONTENTS.

in the general, that he may accomplish his particular, design. 197

CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in GERMANY, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states. 201

CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. CHRYSAL changes his service. 206

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of GERMANY. A short view of the war between the FRENCH and ENGLISH, with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it, into GERMANY. Insidious ambition meets a just disappointment. 210

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid scheme d'sconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit, it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy ENGLISH soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin. 219

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAI arrives in BRUSSELS. *The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.* 226

CHAP. XIV.

The confessor entertains CHRYSAI's master, with another, not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place. 232

CHAP. XV.

Continued: His lordship's scheme to sling his rival unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss. Law often spoils sport. 237

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAI's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. *Curious anecdotes of a GREAT man.* 244

CHAP. XVII.

Continued: He comes to ENGLAND, where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities, in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom

CONTENTS.

whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand. 252

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and suffers a second shipwreck in ENGLAND. He that will not when he may, &c.—It is often better to play a poor game than stand out. CHRYSAL arrives in LISBON. 260

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL comes, at LISBON, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt, without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. CHRYSAL's master is at length taken up; and he changes his service. 264

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest AMINADAB. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at LISBON, in which CHRYSAL suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. CHRYSAL enters into a new service. 270

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the ho'y office. A love scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON and ILISSA. 277

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an ENGLISH sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs. 285

CHAP. XXIII.

The sailor goes to LONDON, buys a ship, and returns to LISBON, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a FRENCH ship. He lands his passengers at ALEXANDRIA, returns home and marries. CHRYSAL quits his service. 288

CHAP. XXIV.

CHYYSAL arrives in LONDON, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion. 297

CHRY-

Eliza Western.
1763



CHRYSA L:
OR THE
ADVENTURES
OF A
GUINEA.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSA L's new master. CHRYSA L attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception.

✻✻✻ HAVE often been apprehensive, that the
✻ I ✻ manner in which I express myself, may
✻✻✻ lead you into some mistakes of my mean-
ing, the signification of words, in the language
of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible
to convey a determinate sense, without such a
periphrasis, as would take up too much time, in so
complicated scenes, as those I describe; for where
different, or perhaps contrary meanings are signi-

VOL. II.

B

fied

2 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

fied by the same word, how easy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take the wrong one?

For instance, the character of a *good man* may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension, from the immutability of the virtues, which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by, or to human frailty: and yet how variously, how contradictorily is it applied?

On the *Royal Exchange* he is a *good man*, who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodness* assumes another appearance, and is attributed to him, who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, though he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws, human and divine: while, in the strictness of truth, and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived, than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modish way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance! they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse, that wins the match, goes *damn'd* fast; as the one that loses, goes *damn'd* slow. The weather in summer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now what sense can the very *Devil* himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions? Though, indeed, these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they shew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the

very

very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common conversation.

But I am not at leisure to prescribe rules for avoiding this confusion, one of the most extensive causes of human error. I shall only give you some cautions to prevent your falling into it, in respect to what I say to you.

You are to observe then, that whenever I speak in the person of another, I always would be understood in the sense which that person would be understood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral, or physical truth, or propriety of speech. But when I speak my own sentiments, (which indeed, I very rarely do) I shall always deliver them with perspicuity and precision, as far as the jargon I am obliged to use will allow, and would have my words taken in the sense, usually given to them, in the particular subject, I may be then speaking of; as the barrenness of language has not been able to afford distinct terms to them all; but is forced to wrest known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injustice of the general complaint against the verbosity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) distinct words art meant, their fault is directly the reverse.

My new master was a person of some learning, and what was of more use, of thorough knowledge of the world; but wanting friends and interest, to advance him to those dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had solicited this place, in discharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry consideration of a poor salary, (for as he was not in the secret, he had no share of the spoils) though his circumstances and knowledge of the value of maney could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a

4 C H R Y S A L: *Or, the*

more conspicuous light, where they might take the notice of his superiors.

As soon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife dress'd in all her best cloaths, and expecting him with the utmost impatience! 'My dear (said she) how could you stay abroad so late? I have been waiting for you above these two hours, and was just going without seeing you.' 'So late, my dear! it is scarcely six o'clock! But where are you going in such haste?'—To the Bishop's! The Rector of— died of an apoplectic fit, as he was taking his nap after dinner this evening, and you know, my intimacy with the Bishop's lady entitles me to ask any thing from her.'—'But, child, this is not in her power to give, and even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance to expect!' 'This diffidence has been your ruin! You are always afraid of asking, as if there was ruin in being refused; but that is not my case! Ask and you shall have, is my text! Now-a-days, nothing is got without it.'—'Yes, child, but too frequent or improper asking brings contempt.'—'The manner, the manner of asking is the thing! And you cannot think I want to be taught that now, after having lived so long among the Great! Often have I known a request, properly made, gain a man a place, for which he was never dream'd of! As to the greatness of this living, never mind that! the greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to the person who gets it for you! What money have you got about you? we shall make a party perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound note! I may have occasion for that too, to make a bett.'

'There,

‘ There, my dear, is the money I received to-day !
 ‘ I’ll step up for the note : but pray, my dearest, take
 ‘ care what you do ! It is our all ! And be sure you
 ‘ are not tempted to any thing like *simony* ! It is a
 ‘ great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever
 ‘ rising, if it is detected.’—‘ And the fool, that is
 ‘ detected, deserves never to rise ! You may call a
 ‘ thing by what nonsensical name you please ; but
 ‘ if knowledge of the world were to prevent peo-
 ‘ ple’s rising in it, I do not know who would be
 ‘ uppermost now-a days ! Bring me the note, and
 ‘ leave the rest to me. You shall know nothing
 ‘ of what I intend till it is done, and then the fault,
 ‘ if any, will be all mine !—Here, *Jane*, settle
 ‘ the furbelows of my scarse, and, *John*, call a
 ‘ chair to the door directly.’ ‘ Well, my dear, here
 ‘ is the note : I leave all to you ! I do not desire to
 ‘ know what you intend : But remember, my dear,
 ‘ *this note is our all !*’ ‘ Never fear ! The chair is
 ‘ come, and I must lose no time ! You will divert
 ‘ yourself with your children, or books, I suppose ;
 ‘ or go to the coffee-house. Perhaps I may not re-
 ‘ turn till ’tis late.’—‘ I wish you success, my dear,
 ‘ and pray be cautious.’

With these words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wife mentioned, I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who carried me away to the Bishop’s.

When she came there, the footman answered, that it was not his lady’s *night*, and she was not at home : but my mistress had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instantly flew open, his lady

was at home, and my mistress shewn up without any farther difficulty.

The Bishop's Lady was sitting at a snug party, with three or four select friends, and seemed not much pleased at the intrusion of my mistress, to whom she scarce deign'd a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I thought, *sirrah*, (said she) that I was not to be at home this evening! I suppose I shall have all the mob of the town let in upon me,'—'Dear madam, (replied my mistress) the man is not to blame! He told me you were not at home; but having some very earnest business, I made bold to break through your orders; but I hope for your pardon, when you know the cause of my intrusion.'—'O madam, (returned the Lady) you know I am always glad of your company. I only chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray be seated, madam; as soon as the *rubber* is up, I shall wait upon you.'—'Dear madam, (added my mistress) you need not give yourself that trouble; now I am with you, my business can wait your leisure.'



C H A P. II:

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finished, my mistress was asked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken suddenly ill, which she did, and sat out the whole evening, her success at cards keeping up

up her spirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair she came about; but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber; and what was still worse, several *by-betts*, which she made to bring herself home.

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company was gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out,—‘And now pray, madam, may I ask what was the great business that brought you here this evening? (said she.) Unlucky business it has been for me, I know; for I have never held a card since you came: but I shall take care, that rascal, who let you in, shall never serve me so again! He shall strip and turn off, without his breakfast, the moment I am up in the morning.’—Dear madam, (replied my mistress, unabashed at such a salute) have patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends for all! Will you please to sit down to one sober party of *picquet*? You are always too *hard* for me, yet I’ll venture all my winnings, and perhaps what I have to say, in the mean time, may compensate for my intrusion.’

The lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o’clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, ‘Dear madam, that is right! Have you heard of the sad accident that happened this evening?’—‘Not I, (replied the other) pray what was it?’—‘Why, poor Doctor —— was taken shortly after dinner, and died in his chair!’—‘Aye, then I suppose, he

8 C H R Y S A L : Or, *the*

‘ *had plumb-porridge and over-eat himself! and so*
‘ *burst a pudding as we say to children. Ha, ha,*
‘ *ha! ——— ‘ Ha, ha, ha! — But pray, madam,*
‘ *have you any faith in dreams? What do you*
‘ *think? I dream’d last night that I saw you at*
‘ *court, on some great occasion, with just such a*
‘ *diamond necklace on, as the Countess’s, which*
‘ *you had bought with five hundred pound, that*
‘ *you won from me on a bett; you laying, that*
‘ *my husband would, and I that he would not,*
‘ *get the Doctor’s living! Well, to be sure, there*
‘ *must be something more than ordinary in it; for*
‘ *can you believe it? this very morning, I put a*
‘ *bank-note for five hundred pound, in my pocket,*
‘ *here it is; though I did not think of the poor*
‘ *man’s death, till I heard it as I came by this*
‘ *evening, when my dream ran so strongly in my*
‘ *head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon*
‘ *you, a rudeness I never should have been guilty*
‘ *of on any other occasion.’ — ‘ Dear madam, you*
‘ *need make no apology to me! You know your company*
‘ *is always welcome. I am always at home to you!’ —*
‘ *But, madam, what do you think of my dream?’*
‘ *—I do not know. I only wish it were to prove true!*
‘ *For five hundred pound could never come more sea-*
‘ *sonably.’ — ‘ Then you must win it; for my heart*
‘ *is set upon making the bett, and I assure you, I*
‘ *have such a regard for you, that I do not even*
‘ *wish you to lose! and that is what few gamesters*
‘ *can say.’ — You are a pleasant creature! but as*
‘ *for the BETT, it shall be upon condition, that my*
‘ *Lord is not under any engagement to the Minister,*
‘ *or her Grace, who got him his bishoprick. If he is*
‘ *disengaged, I will lay you, and you shall lose, my*
‘ *girl, if it was ten times as much, and there’s en-*
‘ *couragement for you to hold. The bell rings! Will*
‘ *you*

‘ you walk down, and take a bit of supper ? There is
 ‘ no body but my Lord and I ; but do not take the least
 ‘ notice of any thing about the matter, nor even seem
 ‘ to have heard of the Doctor’s death, should my Lord
 ‘ mention it ; but muster all your spirits, and be as
 ‘ entertaining as you can, for I always work him up
 ‘ best, when he goes to bed in a good humour.’

The picquet-match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the Bishop’s lady, whose winnings and expectations sent her to supper in high spirits, where she found his Lordship already seated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the usual complimentary expletives, that usher in every polite conversation, ‘ Pray, my
 ‘ Lord, (says my new mistress to her husband)
 ‘ what will you eat ? Shall I help you to a bit of
 ‘ this fricasee ? I believe it is very good.’—‘ No,
 ‘ my dear, I thank you, (replied his Lordship, I
 ‘ have not the least appetite ! What is it pray ?’—
 ‘ Sweet-breads and cock’s-combs, (returned his
 ‘ lady) you used to like them, and they are very
 ‘ nice ! Or will you help yourself to a bit of that
 ‘ fowl before you ? something you must eat.’—‘ No,
 ‘ my dear, I am obliged to your care ; but I do not
 ‘ chuse any thing to-night ; I am not very well ! We
 ‘ all eat too much ! Repletion kills half the people of
 ‘ England ! We eat too much !’—‘ You are going
 ‘ to be hip’d, my dear ! John, give your master a
 ‘ glass of *Madeira* ! Fill the glass ! Eating never
 ‘ hurted any one, who washed down his viſuals
 ‘ with a glass of good wine ; horse-meals, indeed,
 ‘ are enough to choak human creatures ! So ! do
 ‘ not you find yourself better now ? Taste this
 ‘ fricasee ; you cannot think how good it is !’—
 ‘ Well, you will have your way, you make me do as
 ‘ you please, though never so contrary to my inclina-

10 C H R Y S A L : Or, the

' tions! Do you call this a fricasee? I thought fricasees
 ' had spice put in them! This is as insipid as chop'd
 ' hay! Lord deliver us from such cooks! The badness
 ' of servants, in general, seems to be a judgment on
 ' the vices of the age!'——' Well, my dear, taste
 ' that fowl, it looks like a good one, and the
 ' cook could not spoil that. Pray, madam, shall
 ' I trouble you to help his Lordship to a leg and a
 ' wing, and a bit of the breast.'——' You give me too
 ' much! I shall never be able to eat all this! beside,
 ' you know, my dear, I chuse a bit of the rump.'——
 ' Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall have
 ' the rump: but what has happened to make you
 ' so low-spirited this evening?'——' O child, who
 ' can be other than low-spirited, when such instances
 ' of mortality happen before our eyes every hour? Who
 ' can tell but the misfortune may be his own next mo-
 ' ment? There's Doctor ——, poor man! was
 ' taken off this evening, without a minute's warning to
 ' prepare for such a tremendous change, just after he
 ' had made an hearty dinner! Here, John, take
 ' away my plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever
 ' sleep after dinner again!'——' And, John, give
 ' your master another bumper of Madeira; that
 ' was what the Doctor wanted; he eat a great
 ' deal, and did not allow himself any drink. Drink
 ' good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt
 ' you.'——' Ah! but that was not the case of his
 ' Grace of ——, who lies this moment in the
 ' agonies of death! his physicians left him two hours
 ' ago! The Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of
 ' his coming! He did not stint himself of wine; he
 ' took his bottle chearfully, good man!'——' Chear-
 ' fully, did you say? I should have said sottishly;
 ' for he has done nothing but drink for these many
 ' years past! He has ran into the opposite extream
 ' from

‘ from the Doctor, drinking too much, and not
 ‘ eating enough, to support nature. And I hope
 ‘ you do not say he has gone without warning at
 ‘ fourscore? he has had time enough to prepare :
 ‘ but why should these examples affect you par-
 ‘ ticularly? You do not eat like the Doctor, nor
 ‘ drink like his Grace, and are young enough to
 ‘ be son to the youngest of them; why then should
 ‘ you fear their fate? Here, *John*, give me a
 ‘ pint glass half full of *Madeira*, and reach me
 ‘ three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, if
 ‘ you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a bit
 ‘ of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with
 ‘ you.’

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper,
 without being able to join in the conversation;
 but as soon as his Lordship’s taking the jellies made
 a pause in his lady’s tenderness, she called for a
 glass of wine, and bowing to the Bishop, drank to
 him by the title of *his Grace* very gravely.

His Lordship started, and his Lady stared,
 while she finished her glass without any emotion,
 and seemed quite unconscious of having said any
 thing unusual or improper. This behaviour still
 embarrassed them more; when the Lady, unable
 to contain her surprize, ‘ Dear madam, (said she)
 ‘ what have you said? Or how came you to ad-
 ‘ dress my Lord by that title?’ ‘ I hope, madam,
 ‘ (replied the other) I have not said any thing im-
 ‘ proper! You really frighten me! I hope I have
 ‘ not been failing in my respect, or addressed his
 ‘ Lordship by any improper title?’ --- ‘ I cannot
 ‘ say an improper one indeed! but one that does
 ‘ not belong to him, at least as yet,’ (returned the
 ‘ Lady.) --- ‘ Dear madam, what do you mean?
 ‘ Pray do not distress me! but you must divert

‘ yourself surely! It is not possible that I could fail in
 ‘ any respect to his *Grace*!’—‘ Ha, ha, ha! There
 ‘ it is again! Fail in your respect! No. You only
 ‘ raised your respect too high! You called him his
 ‘ *Grace*, that’s all.’——‘ And is that all? Thank
 ‘ heaven that I did! and long live his *Grace*, I say a-
 ‘ gain, (said she dropping on her knees, and eagerly
 ‘ kissing his hand) long live your *Grace*! There
 ‘ is, there must be truth in dreams, and infidels
 ‘ alone can doubt it.’

At the mention of dreams, the Bishop, who had hitherto continued to sup up his jelly, without seeming to take any notice of what they were saying, could not forbear shewing some emotion; for he had the strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely defended their credit, especially since his present elevation had confirmed those of his grandmother; ‘ *What dreams? pray, good madam,*’ (said he, addressing my late mistress with a visible anxiety) ‘ *What dreams do you mean? Those which*
 ‘ *were thought to have respect to me, are understood*
 ‘ *to be already accomplished.*’ ‘ Please your *Grace*,
 ‘ the impulse of the spirit is upon me, and I can-
 ‘ not call you by any other title! Please your
 ‘ *Grace*, I say, I dream’d last night, as I told your
 ‘ Lady but just now, that I met her at court, on
 ‘ some very great occasion, as fine as hands could
 ‘ make her, (I told her this just now, before I
 ‘ knew one syllable of his *Grace*’s death) and that
 ‘ she came up to me smiling, and thank’d me for
 ‘ the cause of her coming there, for it was I who
 ‘ had made you a great man!—Now what could
 ‘ this possibly mean, but what has happened here
 ‘ this moment, when by giving you this title first,
 ‘ (and Lord knows, I did it without the least de-
 ‘ sign, or even being sensible of it when I did it)

‘ I may in some manner be said to have made you
‘ the great man it belonged to : let the world say
‘ what they will, I do believe there is truth in
‘ dreams, and I think mine is *out* now.’

She had ran on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the Bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined ; but that was far from being the case: he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stop’d, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his Lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the Doctor’s living, and as such resolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addressing herself to the other, ‘ Indeed, madam, (said she) I do not know what to say to this affair ! When you told me your dream just now, I made nothing of it, but this account of his *Grace*’s death almost staggers me ! Well, if this succeeds, and who knows what may happen ? I shall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams !’



C H A P. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop’s Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer,
‘ Pray, madam, (said he) what time had you this
‘ vision

14 C H R Y S A L : Or, the

‘ vision or dream ? In the night, or towards the morning ?’ ‘ *In the morning, my Lord, (replied she) at the conclusion of my second sleep : and, indeed, it made such an impression upon my mind, that I could not go to sleep after : for it was not in the confusion of common dreams ! I saw every thing distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very place ; and particularly, your Lady appeared as plainly to me as she sits there, Lord bless us ! and by the same token, she was dress’d in white damask, spick and span new, and had the most beautiful diamond necklace on, that ever my eyes beheld ; and charmingly she look’d I thought.*’

‘ I really do not know what to say to this matter, (replied his Lordship with great deliberation ;) the visions of the morning have ever been held in most repute ; for then the mind has recovered from the fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert its abilities, and look forward into the time to come. There are some good circumstances I own in this dream ! I am glad that my wife was not dress’d in colours ; that would have been an ill omen ; but white is the peculiar garment of success ; angels are clad in white ! and in this case particularly, it may prefigure the episcopal lawn, as that is an emblematical type of the purity of the episcopal function ; and the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only in degree. As for the necklace, there may be more in that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are the insignia of dignity, and in the Jewish priesthood particularly, were symbolical of the highest order ; for none of the priests wore them, but the supream or high priest, whose dignity answer’d nearly to that of *Primate* with us ; and if such farther blessings should be in the divine will, it
‘ were

‘ were impious and ungrateful to refuse its favours.
 ‘ Perhaps I speak unintelligibly to you; but the
 ‘ opinions of the learned must be delivered in their
 ‘ phrase.’—‘ *Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could bear*
 ‘ *your Lordship for ever; I always am the wiser and*
 ‘ *the better for hearing your Lordship.*’

‘ Then as to the credit to be given to dreams,
 ‘ (resumed his Lordship) though the scepticism of
 ‘ these unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of
 ‘ wiser antiquity was of another opinion, of which
 ‘ numberless instances might be given out of the
 ‘ holy Scriptures. And among the *Gentiles*, the
 ‘ greatest of their poets says, *Ovæ ex dios est*, that
 ‘ is, in *English*, *dreams proceed from Jove*, that is,
 ‘ from the supreme Deity, whom they erroneously
 ‘ call’d by that name. And tho’ the heathens were
 ‘ guilty of great superstitions in this particular of
 ‘ dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them,
 ‘ but in the methods which they used to procure
 ‘ them; such as offering sacrifices, and sleeping in
 ‘ the skins of the victims, and many others;
 ‘ whereas, the dream that comes from heaven,
 ‘ comes unsought and unexpected, and should be
 ‘ received with reverence! And if this is such, and
 ‘ I own it has much of the appearance, Thy will
 ‘ be done, O Lord! Thy servant submits as it is
 ‘ his duty.

Greatly as they must have been edified by this elaborate dissertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, especially his wife, who knew not which to admire most, the readiness of the thought, or the ease with which it was received. But the dreamer had a farther scheme in her head, to carry on which she now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Bishop, ‘ My Lord, (said she) may I beg your
 ‘ Lord-

16 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

‘ Lordship’s blessing ! I hope, and I am confident
 ‘ in that hope, that mine was not a common
 ‘ dream, from the impresson it made on my mind,
 ‘ which could not have been stronger, if I had
 ‘ actually been present at your Lady’s kissing the
 ‘ King’s hand on your promotion : but if my zeal
 ‘ has hurried me too far in my expressions of it, I
 ‘ rely on your goodness to forgive my fault, which
 ‘ was rather an enthusiasm than a design ; and so,
 ‘ my Lord, I beg leave to wish you a good night.’

With these words she withdrew ; and her patroness wondering she had not thrown her a wink, and desirous to have a laugh with her at her husband’s credulity, went as to see her to her chair ; when turning with her into another room, ‘ That
 ‘ was an excellent thought, (said she) and will
 ‘ make our affair quite easy, if he is not engaged.’

—‘ *I do not understand you, madam,* (replied the
 ‘ other) *pray what thought do you mean ?*’ — ‘ Why,
 ‘ child, that of the dream ; what else should I
 ‘ mean ?’ — ‘ *A thought, dear madam ! Why, do not*
 ‘ *you think I was serious, and the dream real ?*’ —

‘ Not one word of either, I assure you ; and I wonder at your asking me that question here, where
 ‘ no one is present to observe us !’ — ‘ *Dear madam,*
 ‘ *you have quite mistaken me, I assure you. It is*
 ‘ *true, I can jest sometimes ; but in this, give me*
 ‘ *leave to say, that I was most serious ; and what is*
 ‘ *more, that I am sure the event will confirm it.* —

‘ You astonish me, madam ; I declare I look’d
 ‘ upon the whole as a mere *finesse*, to promote our
 ‘ scheme, about the Doctor’s living, for your
 ‘ husband !’ — ‘ *I am sorry, madam, that you should have*
 ‘ *such an opinion of me, as that I could invent such a*
 ‘ *story on any account !*’ — ‘ Well, (as I said before,
 ‘ though in another sense) I know not what to

‘ make

‘ make of the whole ! But as you are so positive
 ‘ and my Lord seems inclined to believe you, per-
 ‘ haps there may be more in it than I can see ; and
 ‘ therefore I shall suspend my opinion, till I see
 ‘ the end of it. This though I promise, that my
 ‘ assistance shall not be wanting to either part of
 ‘ the dream.’—‘ *And I promise you that I will make*
 ‘ *good all I said, particularly about the wager and the*
 ‘ *necklace ; and so, madam, I wish you a good night ;*
 ‘ *I shall do myself the pleasure to call and see how you*
 ‘ *are in the morning.*’

This gave the whole affair a new face ; and
 threw the Bishop’s Lady into a meditation as pro-
 found as his Lordship’s. ‘ Can this be possible ?
 ‘ (said she to herself) and yet, how could she have
 ‘ the face to stand it out so, if it was not true ?
 ‘ But then it was but a dream ! Aye, but my hus-
 ‘ band says, dreams are not to be slighted ; and he
 ‘ should know more than I, at least of those things
 ‘ that are to be found in books. And what if it
 ‘ should be so after all ? and that I should take place
 ‘ of Mrs. —, and Mrs. —, and Mrs. —,
 ‘ and all the rest of the Bishops Ladies !——
 ‘ That would be charming ! And I believe in my
 ‘ soul I shall ; for I have always looked upon them
 ‘ with a contempt that shew’d I should be one day
 ‘ their superior. Well, *Happy come lucky*, says the
 ‘ proverb ; my endeavours shall not be wanting,
 ‘ as I promised Mrs. —, whose five hundred
 ‘ pound will be a pretty earnest of the archbishop-
 ‘ rick.’

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief
 of the dream, she went in to his Lordship, whom
 she found absorbed in thought about the *vision* :
 ‘ Well, my dear, (said she, sitting down by him)
 ‘ what is your opinion of this strange matter ? I
 ‘ own

‘ own it is above my comprehension ! At first I
 ‘ imagined she might have been only in jest, and
 ‘ have invented the whole story meerly to divert
 ‘ your lowness of spirits ; but when I went out
 ‘ with her into the next parlour, and put it home
 ‘ to her, she still persisted in it, and confirmed the
 ‘ truth of what she said by such asseverations, that
 ‘ I could not avoid believing her.’

‘ But, my dear, (replied his Lordship) *she said*
 ‘ *she told you her dream before she came in here, or*
 ‘ *had heard a word of his Grace’s illness !*—‘ She
 ‘ most certainly did, my Lord ; and with other
 ‘ circumstances, that make the whole still more
 ‘ surprizing ! Pray what time did the Doctor die,
 ‘ my dear ?’ — ‘ *About half an hour after four.*’ —
 ‘ That is most wonderful ! And pray, my dear,
 ‘ who is to have his living ? or are you under any
 ‘ engagement about it ?’ — ‘ *No, child, I am not ;*
 ‘ *nor have I yet determined whom to give it to. But*
 ‘ *why do you ask these questions ? What are they to*
 ‘ *the purpose of the dream ?*’ — ‘ I shall tell you, my
 ‘ Lord. You must know then that she came here
 ‘ about four o’clock, just as I had got up from
 ‘ dinner, all in the greatest hurry ; and with a
 ‘ kind of wildness, I do not know how, in her
 ‘ looks, told me her dream ; but with some cir-
 ‘ cumstances, that I know her bashfulness would
 ‘ not permit her to mention before you ; and these
 ‘ were, that I had bought the diamond necklace,
 ‘ she thought I had on at court, with five hundred
 ‘ pound which I had won from her, on a wager
 ‘ that you would give her husband the Doctor’s
 ‘ living. Now as he was not even sick at the time
 ‘ of her telling me this, there could be no design
 ‘ in it ; and this is what makes me take the more
 ‘ notice of the matter.’

‘ But

‘ But are you sure, ch’ld, that she told you this so early as four o’clock ?’ — ‘ Rather before it, my dear ; and what makes me so positive about it is, that a little after she had finished her story, she happen’d to look at her watch, but it was down, and so she ask’d me what o’clock it was by mine, that she might set by it ; and I remember it wanted exactly six minutes of four.’ — ‘ Pray let me look at your watch ; have you not alter’d it since ?’ — ‘ No, my dear ; but why do you ask ?’ — ‘ Because it is nine minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when he died, and his and mine were exactly together ; so that the six minutes which your watch wanted of four, and the nine minutes it is faster than mine, make a quarter before four, which was three quarters before he died. This is most wonderful ! for there could be no design nor art in it. This is most wonderful ! But there have been many revelations made in dreams, even in our own times ; as for instance, that in DRELINGCOURT ; for it could be no other than a dream ; and that other of the great Duke of BUCKINGHAM’s rise, and afterwards of his death, as it is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian*, not to mention many more. As to the Doctor’s living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it ; you may give it to whom you please : though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family ; beside that he has been recommended to me by the whole parish, whom his long residence among them, for he has been there above thirty years, has made love and respect him as a father.’ — ‘ Then let them provide for him, like dutiful children. What assurance !

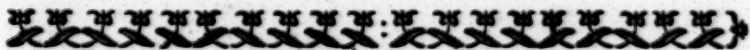
20 C H R Y S A L: Or, the

‘ to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of such matters ! If it was for no other reason I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time.’

‘ *There may be something in that ; I do not like such interfering in my conduct neither ; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character too, who will not discredit any preferment ; but take care that you do not do any thing improper. As to your wager, there is no harm in that ; but even so, it should be kept a secret ; I must know nothing of the matter.*’

— I thank you, my dear Lord ; I shall be sure to observe your directions ; and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take as an happy presage of the rest ; but you must not be wanting to yourself ; you had better, I think, go to her Grace, and see what may offer to promote our hopes.’ —

That is not a bad thought, my dear ; but it grows late ; in the morning we shall see what is to be done.’ Saying this, they withdrew, whither we must not follow them, for of the genial bed, ‘ with most mysterious reverence I deem.’



C H A P. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace.

I Have observed your surprize and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment, invent such

such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the Bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was, in a manner, in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner, by giving you her history.

She was a distant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependant. This occasioned her being taken into his family; where she lived several years as an humble companion to his Lady. As she was handsome, his Lordship had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest hatred, for fear she should inform his lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account; as her observing temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her Ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her situation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordship gave a small vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundred pound, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to speak. As for herself, you have seen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the state she was bred in improved, or rather sharpen'd, into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Bishop and his Lady. This affair had made such an impression on their minds, that they could dream of nothing else all night, but pomp and precedence, which effectually secured the grant, in favour of my late mistress, from all danger of revocation.

They

They were scarce seated to breakfast, when word was brought them that she was below; upon which she was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any distance or reserve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all sides, his Lordship, with a look of great benevolence, ask'd her for her husband, and if he was at home; to which she answered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be disagreeable I hope, (replied his Lordship) and if he is at leisure.'—'At leisure, my Lord! (replied she in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained the matter to her) He is, he must be at leisure! No business can interfere with his duty! I'll step for him this moment.'—'You need not give yourself that trouble, madam, (return'd his Lordship). *John*, do you go, and tell Mr. ——— that I should be glad to speak with him. For, madam, I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, piety, and good life, with the *living* of the poor Doctor. It is what I have long resolved, though I never mentioned it before, because I would not torture him with expectations; and I give it to him now, thus early and unask'd, to spare his modesty, and to save myself from the solicitations of others.'—'Long live, God bless your *Grace*! (said she, throwing herself at his feet, and embracing his knees in extacy) for so I see it will be, every thing will come out just according to my dream! I could not forbear sending to the *late* Archbishop's, just before I came here, and the porter (for I would not send a servant, for fear my known attachment to your Lordship should make it taken notice of) brought
' me

‘ me word, *that he was at peace.*’—This compleated the Bishop’s faith, and prevented his sending to enquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

‘ I must wish you joy, madam, (said the Bishop’s Lady) of this advance in your fortune ! Though I am almost angry that my Lord did not let me into the secret. I have lost some hours happiness by his reserve ; for I always make the happiness of my friends my own.’ — ‘ *Dear madam, I thank you ; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both ! And give me leave, madam, to wish YOU joy of his LORDSHIP’s promotion, and of your just advance in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to it !—‘ The necklace I suppose you mean ? Ha, ha, ha !—‘ I do, indeed, dear madam, and of every other happiness that can attend so elevated a station.*’

Her husband now entered in the utmost agitation of spirits between hope and fear ; for he was not a stranger to his wife’s scheme ; (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the *bett* himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly ; for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious ceremony of the Bishop’s signing the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refusing other applications, they withdrew, when my mistress was paid her *bett*, with as great pleasure, by the loser, as she felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accomplished, the successful dreamer and her husband went home in the highest joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependance, and the fears of want ; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her

Grace’s

Grace's levee, and see whether any thing should offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he call'd to his Lady, to receive her advice, and recollecting that he had forgot his purse, desired to borrow hers, in which I was; and thus I changed my service once more.

When his Lordship entered her *Grace's* levee, and had paid his most humble respects, he found the conversation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his diocese, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumstances so moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raise the compassion of the whole company, and particularly of her *Grace*, who said, that she would most willingly contribute to the relief of their distress, but that unluckily she had not less than a bank note for twenty pound, about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, understood her *Grace*, and drop'd the subject; but my new master, who had his knowledge of *mankind* mostly from *books*, was so far from taking the hint, that he thought he shewed his respect for his patroness, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money she wanted.

Her *Grace* was surprized, as the company were confounded, at the *ignorant insolence* of such an offer. However, as this was not an occasion for shewing her resentment, she coldly told him, she would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the person who had mentioned the affair, and carelessly threw the rest, *among which I was*, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late master, pleased with the thought of having been instrumental in so meritorious a benevolence;

volence, displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself; (for respect to her *Grace* would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty,) as did the rest of the company, who all laugh'd in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her *Grace*, by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to observe their looks, and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly step'd up to her, and begg'd leave to speak a word or two with her, in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.



CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes his Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow protestants, in GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.

THE great honour of this private audience, at first put him into some confusion, but recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that, 'sensible of her *Grace's* great humanity and commiseration for the sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just given so noble an instance.'

‘ stance.’—‘ Pray, my lord, no compliments, (said her Grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging) ‘ I am not at present ‘ at leisure for them, and if you have no other ‘ business’—‘ May it please your Grace, (replied the bishop) ‘ your virtues are above compliment! and I come to give you an opportunity ‘ of exerting them, not solely to praise them’—
‘ *I do not understand you, my Lord! and I am in some haste!*’ —‘ I most humbly beg your ‘ Grace’s pardon! I shall not delay you long! ‘ To come then briefly to the purpose, I must ‘ inform your Grace, that out of the income ‘ which it has pleased the Divine Providence, ‘ through your Grace’s means, to give me, I ‘ have thought it my duty to lay by some little ‘ matter, to make a return with, to the Divine ‘ beneficence, in charity to his distressed creatures. Now, as your Grace’s kind interest ‘ was the means through which this ability was ‘ conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble ‘ you with the distribution of my mite.’——
‘ *Me, my Lord? You astonish me! I cannot comprehend you!*’ —‘ I beg your Grace’s indulgence for a moment. You will forgive this ‘ boldness, when you know the motive! —— ‘ hem! hem!

‘ The sufferings of my *Protestant* brethren in ‘ *Germany*, (I say brethren, for men should know ‘ no distinction, but religion) their sufferings, I ‘ say, in this calamitous time of war and rapine, ‘ when the ambition of princes works the ruin ‘ of their people, has made such an impression ‘ upon my heart, that I come to offer this small ‘ matter to your Grace, to be applied to their ‘ relief, as your better knowledge shall see most ‘ proper:

‘ proper : a trouble which I should not have presumed to give your *Grace*, did not I know that such works of charity are a pleasure to you ; and that the better information, which in your high rank you must necessarily have, will enable you to apply it more effectually to their relief than I, in the darkness and ignorance of my humble station, possibly can. I am almost ashamed of the smallness of the sum, (it is but two thousand pounds) but it is all that I have yet been able to save ; though I hope to give a better account of my stewardship another time ; and that I shall be found not to have buried my talent, especially if it should please the Divine Providence to raise me to an higher station, and thereby put the means more liberally into my power —

‘ I most humbly beg your *Grace*’s forgiveness of this intrusion on your time. I am, your *Grace*’s most humble servant.’ — ‘ Stay, my Lord, (returned her *Grace*, with a look and accent softened into the most engaging affability) ‘ Pray do not go ; I see you so seldom, except in the croud, that I cannot part with you so soon. I thank you for the confidence you place in me ; and shall apply your charity to the best of my judgment. Poor people ! they greatly want relief, and if the invincible fortitude of the *Bulgarian* monarch does not extricate them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But every thing is to be hoped for, from such an hero !

‘ You are very good to consider the distresses of the poor people ! there are few now who think of any thing but themselves ; so their appetites are satisfied, they have no feeling for what others suffer. But, my Lord, is there

‘ any thing that I can serve you in ? You may depend upon my interest at all times.’—— ‘ I am much beholden to your Grace (replied his lordship, elevated at such an offer, and now secure as he thought of his hopes) ‘ I am much beholden to your Grace ! I have had too much experience of your Grace’s goodness to doubt it. Nothing, that I know of at present : if any thing should happen, I shall be most grateful to your Grace for your kind remembrance. We are all desirous of having our power to do good enlarged.’——

‘ Yes, my Lord ; all good men, like your Lordship, are. It is a duty to desire so. But, have you heard any thing of the archbishop of —— lately !’—— ‘ Not very lately, please your Grace.’—— ‘ I believe that old man will never die ! He was taken with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire every moment. But he has got over it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for many years.’—— ‘ In—d-e-e-d !’ ‘ What is the matter, my Lord ? something seems to ail you.’—— ‘ A—a—fud—den — f—faint—ness has — come — o o—ver—me ; I — mu—st — beg — y—our Grace—’s — p—ardon —, I — am y—our— Grace—’s — m—ost—h—h—hum—ble servant—;’ with which words he made a bad shift to crawl out, muttering to himself— ‘ O my money ! my money ! O ! this cursed dream ; my money ! my money !’——

Her Grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into a loud laughter, ‘ And is it so, my good Lord ! does the wind fit that way ? Then I can account for your charity. Ha ! ha ! ha ! ——

‘ But

‘ But you are disappointed this time, and, I
‘ fear, will the next too, if you do not *bid* bet-
‘ ter. Two thousand for five thousand a year !
‘ Is that your conscience ! But it will never
‘ do.’—

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me to take a view of my new mistress’s heart, as she sat at her toilet; I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being *here* my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold, which my mistress had accumulated, having taken entire possession of her soul.



CHAP. VI.

*The true use of court-favour. The Biter bitten.
An easy way to obtain a fine feather, for a fool’s
cap. The influence of office, in hindering an house to
be built, instead of an hen-coop; and spoiling her
Grace’s dairy. How to make the most of a
common: A Beau Lord beaten by a Eailiff,
for walking the fields, in an undress.*

WHILE my late master retired, to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself, with the virtuous reflection of so single an act of charity, her Grace sat down to
C 3 her

her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty, denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far compleated that she could attend to other business, one of her most favour'd domesticks told her, that she had that very morning received an offer, from a man who kept a noted beer house, and shuffle-board, for the place of tapster, to the Lord Mayor, which she was sure her Grace's interest would readily obtain. ' Tapster ! (answer'd her Grace) ' what is the value of that place ? Reach me the ' list of employments, with their salaries and ' perquisites, out of that drawer ! Let me see ! ' Tapster to the Lord Mayor ! aye here it is ! ' Well and pray what does he offer for it ? — ' A thousand guineas, please your Grace (replied ' her woman) which I really think enough for ' it, considering every thing. — ' Do you indeed ! ' But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as ' worth five hundred pounds a year ; and is that ' worth no more than a thousand guineas ! Does ' the fellow value his own life, only at two years ' purchase ? — ' Five hundred pounds a year ! ' How can that be ? The salary is no more than ' sixty ! there must be some mistake, in your ' return. — ' The salary ! the salary signifies ' nothing ; it is the perquisites ! The perquisites ' are the thing ! Do you think any place is va- ' lued by the salary ? The perquisites of this ' place are very considerable. Let me see ! Why, ' he buys in all the beer and gin himself, for ' which he can charge what price he pleases ; and ' and then his own account is taken, for the quan- ' tity that is drunk. Aye indeed : there must be ' a mistake in my return to be sure ; but not of ' the

‘ the kind you mean. The place is rated too
‘ low; for which such opportunities, it must be
‘ worth twice the sum; and I shall enquire into
‘ that matter, before I dispose of the place. A
‘ thousand guineas, for such a place! I wonder
‘ at the fellow’s conscience, to make such an
‘ offer!’ — ‘ All this is very true; but then there
‘ are some circumstances, that must be considered
‘ on the other hand too. You know the Lord
‘ Mayor’s year is almost ended; and then, who
‘ knows whether his successor will continue all
‘ the servants, or not. This one, it certainly is
‘ most likely he will not; for as he is a known
‘ enemy to gambling, and has publickly declared
‘ that he will put the laws in execution, against
‘ all such practices, it can not be thought, that
‘ he will permit a fellow, who has kept an
‘ house that has been so notorious for it, and
‘ where so many men have been brought to the
‘ gallows, and their families to beggary, to hold
‘ a place of such profit under him; beside, he has
‘ people of his own to provide for, who have
‘ served his father, and himself in such a man-
‘ ner, as to deserve his confidence and regard,
‘ so that every chance (to speak in his own
‘ way) is against this man, which is so well
‘ known, that no body else would bid for the
‘ thing, at all; wherefore, if I may presume
‘ to speak my opinion, his offer should be im-
‘ mediately accepted.’ — ‘ There may be some-
‘ thing, in what you say; but then, if it was
‘ so very precarious a place, do you think some
‘ of his customers would not inform him of it!
‘ they certainly must know it.’ — ‘ Why the
‘ very reason of my desiring your Grace, to close
‘ with him directly is for fear they should tell
‘ him,

' him, as they undoubtedly would, if they
 ' suspected his intention, in the least; but he
 ' conceals it from them; for the principal mo-
 ' tive of his quitting the business he is in, and
 ' seeking this place, is because the greatest part
 ' of his customers have got deeply into his debt,
 ' which he can never expect them to pay, while
 ' he continues his business, whereas he thinks
 ' if he can get this place, it will be a good
 ' excuse for his calling in his money, and then
 ' the Lord Mayor's power will protect him from
 ' their resentments. This is the true secret of
 ' the matter; for if it was not, on this account,
 ' he has a much better opportunity of getting
 ' money, where he is, than in any place.' —
 ' Well then, be it so! make the most you can
 ' of it; and I care not how soon the fellow is
 ' turned out after. What is the matter? what
 ' do you laugh at?' — ' I beg your Grace's
 ' pardon, an odd thought just came in my head;
 ' but it does not signify.' — ' What is it? Come;
 ' I must know it.' — ' Why I am almost ashamed
 ' ed to mention it; though it is but a trifle nei-
 ' ther, as such matters go now. Your Grace
 ' knows that my husband has a place under the
 ' Lord Mayor! Now it just came into my head,
 ' that when his Lordship comes to wait upon
 ' the King, to be knighted, it would be no bad
 ' joke, if his Majesty could be prevailed on, to
 ' knight my husband also.' — ' Ha! ha! ha!
 ' And so Madam has a mind to be a Lady.
 ' Why with all my heart? There is no great
 ' matter in it, to be sure; and I see no reason
 ' why you should not have that title as well as
 ' a chandler, or shoemaker's wife. Indeed,
 ' the candidates for knighthood have run so very
 ' low

' low of late, that a man of honour should be
 ' ashamed to accept of it. But that is no con-
 ' cern of mine! I got the money, and where I
 ' can do that, I care not if it was from Jack
 ' Ketch: let others look to that. Well; since
 ' you have taken a fancy to stick a fool's fea-
 ' ther in your cap, tell your good man, when
 ' he kneels by his master, at the important cere-
 ' mony, not to be too hasty to rise, and I'll take
 ' care your ambition shall be satisfied; though
 ' I do not know what we must do then. Your
 ' *Ladyship* will never condescend to put on my
 ' shoes, or take away the bed-pan; so that I
 ' believe I must look out for another servant.' —
 ' Your Grace is pleased to joke; but you are
 ' very well convinced, that I have no ambition,
 ' above your service; and shall ever be proud
 ' to perform the meanest offices about you. In-
 ' deed, in this affair, I have more respect to
 ' your Grace's honour, than to myself. While
 ' I wait upon you, (and I would not give up
 ' that, to be made a countess) I am but your
 ' servant, let me be called by what title, I will;
 ' but then I think it is not proper, that you
 ' should be waited on by common servants, like
 ' any other person, of your *apparent* rank. As
 ' you are the fountain of all honour, and no-
 ' bility, you should have Nobles, to attend you,
 ' as well as Knights, if I could have my wish.
 ' And it was this tenderness of your Grace's
 ' honour that made me so particularly affected,
 ' at what happened yesterday.' — 'Yesterday!
 ' I do not understand you! What happened
 ' yesterday?' — 'Your Grace may remember
 ' that you were so kind some time ago as to
 ' obtain leave for me from the Lord of the

34 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

‘ Manor, to build a little poultry house, in a
 ‘ corner of yonder common-field. I accord-
 ‘ ingly set the masons at work, and liking the
 ‘ situation, thought it was no great trespass to
 ‘ enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge,
 ‘ with a room or two where I could have my
 ‘ clothes washed, and drink a dish of tea, with
 ‘ a friend, at any time I might, have a mind to
 ‘ be retired; but behold, after the wall of the
 ‘ yard was built, and the Lodge raised, as high
 ‘ as the first story, the Bailiff of the manor
 ‘ happened to come by, and seeing what I in-
 ‘ tended, had the insolence to fly into a passion,
 ‘ and saying it was an incroachment beyond the
 ‘ leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen
 ‘ to pull down every stone they had laid, though
 ‘ I myself, on receiving notice of it, went
 ‘ there, and told him it was by your Grace’s
 ‘ order, and for your own use, and alledged the
 ‘ expence you had been at; but it was all to no
 ‘ purpose, for he would not leave the place, till
 ‘ his orders were executed: nor was this all;
 ‘ he has had the assurance also, to send me word
 ‘ this very morning, that he would distrain the
 ‘ cows, that you desired me to put to graze, in that
 ‘ field, if I do not directly pay for their pasture,
 ‘ according to the rate he is pleased to charge;
 ‘ which is more, than I have been able to make
 ‘ of the milk; though by your Grace’s recom-
 ‘ mendation, I have had so good customers for
 ‘ it; so that instead of the profit I expected to
 ‘ make for you, of your Dairy, your Grace is
 ‘ like to be a loser.’ — ‘ Insolent! unreasonable
 ‘ fellow! Not to be content with his own ex-
 ‘ travagant profits, without hindering every
 ‘ body else, of coming in for the least advantage
 ‘ with

‘ with him : but he has neither shame, nor
‘ conscience, or else he would be satisfied with
‘ plundering the ponds, and selling the fish, and
‘ hiring out the grafs as he does, without put-
‘ ting the parish to the expence of fencing in the
‘ common, to prevent the people even from
‘ walking over the grafs ! But, I may, some
‘ time or another, find a way to be even with
‘ him. He stands but badly in his master’s fa-
‘ vour, who despises such avarice, and would turn
‘ him out of his place directly, but that un-
‘ luckily he has it, under his hand, for life ;
‘ however, I shall watch every opportunity to
‘ return him the compliment ; that I can assure
‘ him. Let him take such liberties, with his
‘ equals ! I’ll have him to know, that he shall
‘ treat me with more respect.’

‘ That is true ! Has your Grace heard, how
‘ cavalierly he behaved lately to the young
‘ Lord — ? I forget his name. The great beau
‘ that made such a noise, by dangling after the
‘ gentleman’s wife.’ — ‘ I know whom you
‘ mean : No ! I have heard nothing about him,
‘ what has been the matter ?’ — ‘ Ha ! ha ! ha !
‘ I do not believe I shall be able to tell it, for
‘ laughing. Why, your Grace must know, that
‘ the Beau was walking, one morning, in a very
‘ plain dress, across the upper part of the com-
‘ mon, where happening to meet a farmer’s
‘ maid, going to drive home her cows, he en-
‘ tered into chat with her, and prevailed upon
‘ her to quit the path, and walk with him,
‘ into an unfrequented part of the field, where
‘ they sat down, under a clump of trees, for
‘ the sake of a little very innocent conversation,
‘ to be sure. Well : they had not been there

‘ long, when one of the Under-bailiffs, whom
 ‘ this insolent fellow keeps to watch the grafts,
 ‘ seeing them go out of the road, followed them;
 ‘ and coming upon them, in a very unseasonable
 ‘ minute, not only interrupted their conver-
 ‘ sation, but also asked the Lord (whose quality
 ‘ he never suspected) in an imperious manner,
 ‘ how he dared to trample the grafts, and threat-
 ‘ ened to take him and his whore before a justice,
 ‘ and have them directly sent to Bridewell.
 ‘ This insult aggravated the offence of his
 ‘ intrusion, to such an height, that the Lord in a
 ‘ rage bade the scoundrel instantly get out of his
 ‘ sight, or he would break his head. Such
 ‘ words, from a person of his appearance, raised
 ‘ the insolence of office so high, that the Bailiff,
 ‘ without any more ado, lifted his staff, and
 ‘ knocked his Lordship down, where he bela-
 ‘ boured him severely, repeating the word Scoun-
 ‘ drel, between every blow, till the poor battered
 ‘ Beau was in a most doleful plight, tho’ he had
 ‘ often told him, who he was, and roared out his
 ‘ quality, with all his might; but the enraged
 ‘ fellow either did not, or pretended that he did
 ‘ did not believe him.

‘ When he had beaten him as much, as he
 ‘ thought he could, without danger of the gallows,
 ‘ he dragged him along to the high-way, where
 ‘ fortunately a coach happened to come by, the
 ‘ owner of which knew his Lordship, and took
 ‘ him up, ordering his servants to apprehend the
 ‘ Bailiff, but he was too nimble for them, and
 ‘ made his escape, and now finding his mistake
 ‘ and the danger into which he had fallen, he went
 ‘ directly to his master, and telling him the story,
 ‘ in the most favourable manner for himself,
 ‘ prevailed

‘ prevailed upon him, to promise to stand by
‘ him ; particularly as he alledged that the affair
‘ had proceeded from his great care of his master’s
‘ grass, which could never be kept, if he should
‘ be left to suffer for defending it.

‘ In the mean time, the poor Lord was in so
‘ very bad a taking, that all the physicians and
‘ surgeons in town were gathered about him ;
‘ by whose assistance he was confined to his bed,
‘ for near a week. As soon as he was permitted to
‘ speak and see his friends, he sent directly to the
‘ head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had
‘ used him ; but all the satisfaction he could obtain,
‘ even when he went and applied in person, was
‘ to have the fellow removed to another part of
‘ the common ; nor could he obtain this, till he
‘ declared that he would make his complaint di-
‘ rectly, to the Lord of the Manor, if he had
‘ not some redress : It is said, he talked of chal-
‘ lenging him, but he is one of the grand jury,
‘ of the court-leet, and therefore can not be call-
‘ ed to an account that way.’



C H A P. VII.

*An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-
jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace’s
kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another
visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve
for a broken character.*

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were
over, and my mistress’s face finished for the
day, when a person entered to her, whose ap-
pearance

38 C H R Y S A L : Or, *the*

pearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a Lady of her rank.

The most shabby, squallid dress covered a distorted carcass, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow nearly as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy, curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her Grace, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon business, told her, ' that he came to know if she meant to *buy in* ' that day, for the report raised in *the Alley*, by ' *their* express from abroad, had given such a ' stroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to ' the ground ; but would most certainly rise again ' the next day, as soon as the news, which had ' arrived that morning, should be known ; which ' could not be kept a secret, as the people wanted something to keep up their spirits, among ' so many miscarriages, and divert them from ' making too close enquiries into the conduct of ' affairs.

' Why ! my honest friend *Aminadab* ! (replied ' her Grace) I must be directed in these matters ' by you. If you think there is any thing to be ' got, by *buying in* to day, with all my heart : ' though I must own I cannot conceive why you ' should *sell out*, the very last week, to *buy in* ' this.'

' Ah ! my lady (returned *'minadab*) there is a ' mystery in all business, and in none greater than ' ours. The *Bulgarian King's* success last week ' raised

‘ raised people’s spirits so high, that they thought
 ‘ the world was to be all their own, and there-
 ‘ fore bought at any price. Now that was the
 ‘ time for a prudent person to *sell*, as I advised
 ‘ your *Grace*; which we had no sooner done,
 ‘ than instantly comes an express, (*of our own*)
 ‘ with an account that the enemy had turned
 ‘ upon him in their retreat, and entirely vanquish-
 ‘ ed the vanquishers.

‘ This news quite overthrew the spirits raised
 ‘ by the former, and made every one eager to sell
 ‘ out at any loss, for fear the enemy should *get*
 ‘ *wings and fly over*, to take all they had. Now
 ‘ as this was but a terror raised by ourselves, we
 ‘ take the advantage of it, and so buy in when
 ‘ others are selling out 20 *per cent.* cheaper than
 ‘ we ourselves sold out last week, when the
 ‘ madness bent the other way; and may perhaps
 ‘ *sell* again the next, when another packet shall
 ‘ set things right, and bring the people back their
 ‘ senses. For the senses of the people of this
 ‘ country are as inconstant as the sea, depending
 ‘ entirely upon the winds that blow them news.’

‘ *But is it really possible that any people can be*
 ‘ *such fools?*’ ‘ O, please your *Grace*, they are
 ‘ only too rich! They have more money than
 ‘ they know what to do with; that is all.’—
 ‘ Then, *Aminadab*, we will ease them of some of
 ‘ the burthen. And would it not be better to con-
 ‘ ceal this news for another day; might not that
 ‘ make them fall still lower?’ — ‘ But, my lady,
 ‘ the people want the good news.’ — ‘ The
 ‘ people may hang themselves in despair, I care not,
 ‘ so I get money.’ — ‘ The government though’—
 ‘ What is the government to me? I will get all I
 ‘ can, and then leave them to themselves, to sink or
 ‘ swim

' swim as they will; it is all one to me.'——' That
 ' is true; your *Grace* says right. A people who
 ' do not know, or, at least, will not follow their
 ' own interest, are not worth any person's care,
 ' longer than while he can make something of
 ' them. But we must reserve that stroke for an-
 ' other time. This news has got into the offices,
 ' and nothing there is a secret you know. Be-
 ' sides the *Pannick* was too violent to last; it
 ' begins to wear off already: in another day they
 ' would recover their senses of themselves. I
 ' think, therefore, with your *Grace's* approba-
 ' tion, to buy in all I can to-day; without you
 ' had rather lay out your money in the supplies,
 ' for the Protestants of *Germany*.'—' *With all my*
 ' *heart, if you can make as much of it that way as*
 ' *in the funds: but not otherwise. I would not lose*
 ' *one shilling for any people under heaven!*'

' Your *Grace* has a just notion of the world, and
 ' of the value of money that governs it. Indeed,
 ' I must say, that the terms for these supplies are
 ' very unreasonable, considering how such things
 ' have been done, for some time past. It is ex-
 ' pected that people should bring in their money,
 ' without any *premium*, or other advantage, than
 ' what was publickly calculated for, at the grant-
 ' ing them. But these œconomists will find
 ' themselves mistaken. The world is wiser now-
 ' a-days, than to give up advantages which they
 ' have once got possession of. As to that affair,
 ' therefore, I should think it better to let it stand
 ' a little longer, till the necessity becomes more
 ' urgent, and then they will be glad to come into
 ' our terms, if it were not that the poor people
 ' may be ruined in the mean time; so that indeed

‘ I am at a loss what to advise your Grace to do, in so nice an affair.’

‘ *Why let them be ruined then : it is not my fault ; nor is it my business to save them ; nor will I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do suffer by the delay, those who gave them this supply to prevent their ruin, may give them another to repair it.*’—‘ I cannot but admire your Grace’s judgment in all things. You are above the foolish weakness of nature, and have the noble resolution to see your own family perish, rather than injure your own interest, to relieve them. I shall obey your Grace in all things. I go now to the *Alley*, where business will soon begin.’—‘ *Do, honest Aminadab, and fear not ; though I could not procure an establishment for your whole nation, as I would have done, I certainly will for your family, and that is enough for you. Your son shall be made a BARONET at least ; you have riches enough to support the title.*’

‘ Your Grace is very good ; our people are all satisfied of your kind intentions : but, alas, that was a severe disappointment to us, after costing us so much money. The children of the Lord weep over it in their synagogues, and the daughters of *Sion* lament it in their songs ; but my household shall rejoice in thy favour, and the labours of my life prove my gratitude for it.’

Honest *Aminadab* was no sooner gone, than there entered an agent, seemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the other did in money ; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the same.

‘ May it please your Grace, (said he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony) ‘ I come
‘ to

' to wait upon you, about that place in the—— :
 ' that gentleman will not, indeed cannot, give
 ' one shilling more for it.'—' *Then let the other*
 ' *have it ; I will not lose five pence, much less five*
 ' *hundred pounds, for him.*'—' But, please your
 ' Grace, you know what grounds he has to ex-
 ' pect it on ; besides your promise, which cannot
 ' well be broken through, it was so positive.'—
 ' *My promise was only conditional (in my own in-*
 ' *tention) that he should give me as much as another,*
 ' *and in no other sense will I keep it. As for his*
 ' *grounds of expectation, I regard them not : let him*
 ' *make the most of them, where he can.*'—' Just
 ' as your Grace pleases ; I only took the liberty
 ' of speaking my own opinion, but always in
 ' submission to your's. Not but I must own I
 ' am apprehensive of this gentleman's resentment,
 ' though not immediately for myself, so much
 ' as for your Grace's character, with which he
 ' may be provoked to make too free upon such
 ' an affair.'—' *Aye ! that is liberty, your boasted*
 ' *English liberty, to speak disrespectfully of your*
 ' *superiors. But I despise whatever he can say :*
 ' *nor will I give up my own way for fear of his im-*
 ' *pertinence.*'—' Very right ; your Grace is very
 ' right. It were by no means fit that you should :
 ' but then it is to be considered, whether this
 ' breach of promise may not be attended with
 ' inconveniencies, that may overballance the
 ' advantage, as it may make others afraid to deal
 ' with you another time.'—' *I will venture*
 ' *that : none come to me but for their own advantage,*
 ' *and while they can find that, they will scarce stay*
 ' *away for punctilios. So let me hear no more of*
 ' *this, but close with the other directly.*'

‘ Will

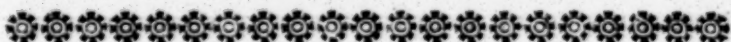
‘ Will not your Grace please to abate of your demand for that place in *Ireland*? I really fear you rate it too high.’ — ‘ *Not a shilling! I will not abate a shilling! Surely I ought to know the value of things in IRELAND by this time! I have had sufficient dealings there, to teach me; it has been my privy purse for many years.*’ — ‘ But what I fear is, that if your Grace does not fix upon some one directly, the lord deputy may, and that would disappoint you; for this place has ever been immediately in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dishonour on him, to give it up.’ — ‘ *Dishonour indeed! I am much concerned for his honour certainly! And as for his naming any one to contradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he does that. The example of his predecessor will teach him.*’ — ‘ However, if your Grace pleases, to prevent any disputes, I will wait on him, and tell him that you have a friend, whom you design to recommend.’ — ‘ *With all my heart; you may if you will. But as to the price, I will not abate one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know that places in that country are either mere pensions, without any thing to do, or even necessity of ever going there at all; or where that cannot be dispensed with, from the nature of the place, that no learning, no abilities are requisite. If it was here indeed, where knowledge in a profession is absolutely necessary to a place in it, there might be something in higgling about the price, but for a coward to scruple paying for being made a general, or a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more unreasonable; and I will not hear another word about it. — But what have you done about those titles, which I gave you to dispose of?*’ — ‘ Really
‘ I do

44 C H R Y S A L: Or, the

‘ I do not know what to say to your Grace about
 ‘ them: the bent of the people does not seem to
 ‘ incline to honours of late. — ‘ *No! I thought*
 ‘ *they were always as good as ready money; espe-*
 ‘ *cially with those who have more money than sense,*
 ‘ *and think it easier to buy, than earn honour by*
 ‘ *merit. An IRISH title was the constant refuge*
 ‘ *of those sons of fortune, who not being born in the*
 ‘ *rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it, by*
 ‘ *their villainies, were desirous of changing their*
 ‘ *names for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace,*
 ‘ *as it were, under an heap of honours, which in*
 ‘ *reality only make them the more exposed to the*
 ‘ *view, and consequently to the censure, of the*
 ‘ *world.* — *But I find, even that imaginary sense*
 ‘ *of honour is gone out of fashion, and the shadow*
 ‘ *is in no more request than the substance, at present.*
 ‘ *But since they are grown such a drug, even make*
 ‘ *the most you can of them: sell them to whoever*
 ‘ *will buy; I shall take no exceptions to persons.’*

‘ I shall certainly do the best I can for your
 ‘ Grace, though they have been so oddly given
 ‘ away of late, that I verily believe people are
 ‘ ashamed of taking them, for fear of being
 ‘ laughed at. Rattles are given to children, but
 ‘ titles to old men, to divert them; to some, in
 ‘ reward for not doing *the very worst* possibly in
 ‘ their power; and to others, for doing *nothing*
 ‘ *at all.* — But pray, has your Grace seen the old
 ‘ colonel yet? he got his commission yesterday;
 ‘ I wish he may mean your Grace fairly.’ — ‘ *Why?*
 ‘ *sure you do not imagine he can have the assurance*
 ‘ *to think of playing me a trick?’* — ‘ I do not po-
 ‘ sitively say so: but his behaviour has been very
 ‘ mysterious.’

Just then, a servant let her *Grace* know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, desired leave to wait upon her. ‘ I thought so, (said she) shew him up: I thought he would not dare to trifle with *me* !’



C H A P. VIII.

*The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace.
Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent.
Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity,
with her tender concern for her friends abroad.*

THE colonel advanced to her *Grace* with the assurance of conscious virtue sparkling in his eye, though sharpened by a cast of indignation. ‘ I come (said he) please your *Grace*, to return you my thanks for your favours: I have got my commission, and had the honour, just now, to kiss his majesty's hand upon it; and as your recommendation was more effectual to procure me this reward than the labours of a life, which has not been untinguished in the service, I thought it my duty to make your *Grace* this acknowledgment, and to offer you any service in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand, in return.’ Colonel (replied her *Grace*) I am glad that it has been in my power to serve a man of your character, and I do not desire any *such* return.’ — ‘ I am much obliged to your *Grace* for your good opinion (returned he) which I hope I shall never forfeit. I thank God, my character will not disgrace your recommenda-
tion;

46 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

‘ tion ; nor shall you ever have reason to blush
‘ at the mention of my name. I have the ho-
‘ nour to be your *Grace*’s most humble servant.’

‘ But colonel (said the gentleman, the agent,
who stood by) ‘ though her *Grace* has no oc-
‘ casion for *such* a return as you offer, having no
‘ quarrels to be fought, there is a return of an-
‘ other nature, which you should not forget,
‘ especially as you promised it too’ — ‘ Why
‘ look you Sir, (replied the colonel) as to that
‘ matter, it is most certain that I did, something
‘ like, promise some such thing, but when I
‘ have told the whole affair honestly to her
‘ *Grace*, I am sure she will be above demanding
‘ it.’ — ‘ Sir (said her *Grace*) I do not desire to
‘ hear any thing more about it ! and I must tell
‘ you that you have behaved like an old knave’. —
‘ Say an old soldier rather, madam, (replied he,
with some warmth) ‘ the other is a term I am not
‘ used to.’ — ‘ A nice distinction truly, and well
‘ worthy of a man of honour’ (said the agent
with a sneer) — ‘ Have a care, Sir, guard your
‘ expressions ; my respect, my obligations to her
‘ *Grace* will make me bear any thing from her,
‘ but I must be so free as to tell you, that I have
‘ not the same sentiments for you.’ — ‘ *What*
‘ *are you going to make a riot in my apartments !*’ —
‘ Not in the least, madam ; my respect for your
‘ *Grace* is a sufficient security from that. I would
‘ only hint it to *that* gentleman, that he may
‘ not always have the protection of your *Grace*’s
‘ presence ; that is all, madam.’ — ‘ *You are a*
‘ *knaveish old ruffian. But I shall take care that*
‘ *you do not come off so.*’ — ‘ As your *Grace* pleases
‘ for that. By the laws of my country I can not
‘ lose my commission, while I do my duty, nor
‘ will my gracious master be influenced to do me
‘ wrong,

‘ wrong, though, in the multiplicity of greater
‘ affairs, my services, my hardships could not
‘ reach his eye. But as I would not bear the im-
‘ putation of any crime, much more, so black
‘ ones, as dishonesty or ingratitude, you must
‘ give me leave to set this affair in a just light to
‘ your *Grace* now, especially as I may never
‘ have another opportunity of doing myself that
‘ justice.

‘ Enraged almost to desperation to find that
‘ thirty years service, the merits of which were
‘ often written in my blood, and stand recorded
‘ in these scars, were not sufficient to procure me
‘ the regular advances of my rank, without a
‘ merit of another nature, I resolved to quit the
‘ barren paths, which I had so long pursued in
‘ vain, and try those methods which I saw prac-
‘ tised with success by others: I therefore applied
‘ myself to your *Grace*, who seemed struck with
‘ my hardships, and promised me your favour;
‘ referring me, for more particular information,
‘ to this gentleman, who would have lowered my
‘ sense of your goodness, by loading it with
‘ terms, which were not in my power to fulfil.

‘ Had your *Grace* mentioned them to me your-
‘ self, I should most certainly have owned my
‘ inability; but coming from him, I looked upon
‘ them as the *fineſſe* of his own art, which it was
‘ not unjustifiable to return with a *ſeint* of mine;
‘ and therefore I gave an equivocal acquiescence
‘ with his proposal, for he dares not say I made
‘ a particular or positive promise of any thing.

‘ If I have done wrong in this I am mistaken,
‘ and sorry for it, but still it is not within the
‘ article of war, that makes an error in judgment
‘ criminal, because it was not against an enemy;
‘ but by all the rules of war, and that is my pro-
‘ fession,

‘ fession, and the only one I have studied, it
 ‘ is allowable to oppose art to art, and try to foil
 ‘ the devil at his own weapons. This is what I
 ‘ have done ; and the success of this stratagem,
 ‘ which has effected by a *Coup de Main* what I
 ‘ had been making regular advances to, so long
 ‘ in vain, proves the justness of my plan, and
 ‘ must extort your *Grace*’s approbation, when
 ‘ the passion raised by this gentleman’s mercenary
 ‘ influence shall cool.’

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my mistress and her agent staring at each other in the strongest surprize.

Her *Grace* found utterance first, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent : ‘ So then, (said she) after all, I
 ‘ find the old ruffian has outwitted you, with a
 ‘ general promise, or no promise at all, it seems,
 ‘ for you did not dare to contradict him. I
 ‘ thought, sir, that I had cautioned you before,
 ‘ against this very thing, and given you positive
 ‘ orders to take nothing but the money. But
 ‘ you shall pay for your neglect ! you shall make
 ‘ good the loss to me. As for the old ruffian, I
 ‘ will speak to his general, and have him broke
 ‘ for a cheat. Talk to me of his services ! what
 ‘ are his services to me ! but I will have him
 ‘ broke ; his example shall terrify others from attempting to abuse me so again.’

‘ I wish it were proper or possible (replied her agent, as soon as want of breath made her stop) ‘ for your *Grace* to have him punished for
 ‘ his insolence ; but such a tongue as his might
 ‘ lay matters too open, if once set a-going, for
 ‘ you see he is not to be over-awed to any thing.
 ‘ As for his commission, there is no loss in it ;

‘ for it was ordered for him before I applied ;
‘ though I made him think it was obtained by
‘ your interest, to try what I could bring him
‘ to. Your *Grace* may be assured that I would
‘ not have taken any promise, had it been other-
‘ wise ; and I was just going to tell you this,
‘ when his coming prevented me.’ — ‘ It may be
‘ so, (returned she ;) but I shall be better satisfied
‘ of it, before I give up your making good the
‘ loss.’

The agent was relieved from farther persecution for that time, by the entrance of a *messenger*, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her *Grace* had any commands for her friends there. ‘ None but my good wishes and prayers
‘ for their deliverance (replied she, with a deep
‘ drawn sigh) which are constantly offered up
‘ for them. I am sorry I am not able to send
‘ them any relief from myself ; but I have no-
‘ thing in my power, no places, no opportunities
‘ of getting any thing : these few pieces (taking
‘ about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where
‘ she had thrown the bishop’s change of her
‘ note) are all, at present, in my possession ; give
‘ them to my dear mother, with my duty, and
‘ tell her I will send her the cloaths she wrote
‘ for, as soon as possible ; and assure the rest of
‘ my friends of my constant attention to their
‘ interest.’



C H A P. VIII.

CHRYSA L changes his service, for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSA L into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win.

I Was, by this time, so sick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number, her Grace gave to the messenger, as I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her Grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where he was sent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who sold glyster-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme, that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the world, in the light of a state-criminal, and get him his hunger well satisfied, while he should be an happy prisoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the *secret* intelligence which he daily

picked up at coffee-houses, or found in the public news-papers, which his *great* friend was to forward to some *great person*, in the service of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office, but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard; so that he began to fear that his scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in public affairs alarming the resentment of the people, and making it evident, that the secrets of the nation were betrayed, this insignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt, so far, that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a sacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a just judgment on the base depravity of soul, that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to trifle with his sacred duty to his country, to support an anxious, burdensome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before so very strong against him, but also made it probable that he was guilty of more, than he was at first even suspected of: this justified the prosecuting him with the utmost severity, and sacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for some victim, to atone for their reproachful losses.

The criminal soon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had said; but this

was not admitted him; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he shewed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had served the turn, and amused the people for his day.

I did not then stay in *England*, to see the event of this affair, but having learned it, since my return, I thought it better to conclude the story in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little, by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money, she had given him, to any other use, than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family, in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of the genteel pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean, domestick duty, as the care of a family. As soon therefore, as his back was turned, she put on her hat, and cardinal, and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady, who kept a chandler's shop, in the neighbourhood, to advise with her, about
settling

settling a party, at her house, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they sat in, being open to the shop, so that they were liable to be over-heard, by every one, who should come in, and there, over a comfortable glass of *right Holland's*, fixed upon the company, and settled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman, who lodged in her house, at the expence of the state, to write cards for her, sent them by her husband's assistant to the company, to invite them to play a game at cards, and spend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order, for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked, by such a set; but I was disappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning, for wine, and brandy, for the occasion.

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrisy of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel-taverns, in the town; but not content with this public insult to the laws, in defiance of every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly, in his house, was chaunting hymns, in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit, for the wickedness of the

times, with a face as meagre, and mortified, as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which, shews instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct, as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pandar, to such an house, as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means, he soon acquired a sum of money, sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business that in a little time made his fortune; but for this success, he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner, like a publick saint, as soon as he thus rose above the drudgery of business, and from porter, became master of a tavern, he associated himself, with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings, he had an opportunity of finding out new faces, for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practise the vices, which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his
avarice,

avarice, but the habit has taken such hold of him that he cannot desist, and he now does, from inclination, what was at first the effect of necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long, upon his character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their course of life, whenever they please; and as soon as their end is answered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtuously, upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his possession, the high-priest of the conventicle called upon him, to spend an hour in spiritual conversation. After examining into his progress in grace, and the encrease of his faith, and assurance of election (for such is the power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating the world, that they practise the art, even upon each other) he told him that he had a most particular occasion, for his most private room this evening. ‘For (said he, shaking him by the hand) my friend, as I have found by experience, that the only way to foil the Devil, is at his own weapons, I have appointed *Momus* the ballad-singer, whose attack upon me has made such a noise, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair, over a glass of wine.’— ‘In truth (answered my master, a good deal surprized) your reverence’s meekness, and patience, must needs be very great; or you could not bear ever to mention him, in any degree of christian charity, and benevolence, after so outrageous and gross an attack, as he has made upon you, without the least personal provoca-

D 4

‘tion;

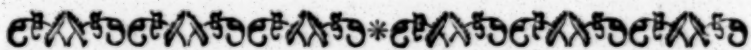
‘tion; for what was it to him, what you said or
 ‘did to the rest of the world, his morals or reli-
 ‘gion were in no danger ! But you were born to
 ‘be an example to the age, and a shining light,
 ‘to guide the steps of the faithful.’

‘A truce with this canting now, my friend,
 ‘(replied the Doctor) and let us talk a few
 ‘words, like men of the world. Your proved
 ‘fidelity and prudence making me not scruple to
 ‘reveal the whole mystery of the ministry to you,
 ‘I will let you into the secret of this affair.
 ‘You must know then, that I have, for some
 ‘time, perceived the humour of the people be-
 ‘gin to waver greatly, and the fervency of their
 ‘devotion to cool, in spite of all I could do
 ‘to keep it up, by preaching, fasting, prayer, and
 ‘lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and
 ‘the wonderful effects of my spiritual labours;
 ‘it was necessary, therefore, to have recourse
 ‘to some new expedient, to prevent their falling
 ‘off, entirely, and accordingly I pitched upon
 ‘this, which has exceeded my expectations; for
 ‘instead of making my people ashamed of com-
 ‘ing to me, it has piqued their pride, and now
 ‘they resolve to shew, that they scorn as much
 ‘to be laughed, as preached, out of their own
 ‘way. This, my friend, is the way of the world,
 ‘which, since we cannot in reality mend, we
 ‘must only strive to make the best of. If I could
 ‘carry on my business, without this assistance, I
 ‘most certainly would never have entered into
 ‘such a confederacy, any more than you would
 ‘keep a brothel, and entertain whores and
 ‘rogues, if you could make equal profit, by any
 ‘other company.’

‘I am

‘ I am much obliged to your reverence (re-
‘ turned my master) for putting me, in any de-
‘ gree of comparison with yourself; but it is
‘ too great an honour! I act in a low sphere;
‘ but I still have the pleasure to think, that even
‘ in my poor way, I contribute something to-
‘ wards your great work; as there could not be
‘ so many converts to resort to you for spiritual
‘ comfort, if there were no places of this kind
‘ to encourage vice and debauchery. You see,
‘ Sir, that I enter into the spirit of your design,
‘ and deserve your confidence, by this return
‘ of mine. There are secrets in all professions,
‘ and as you have entered into a league with
‘ your professed enemy, that you may be able to
‘ play into each other’s hands, so I, notwith-
‘ standing the probity of my professions, have a
‘ private understanding with all the Ladies of
‘ pleasure who resort to this house, who in return
‘ for their being brought into good company,
‘ never fail to enhance expence, and counte-
‘ nance every imposition, of false measures, false
‘ charges, and a thousand others, by which a
‘ prudent man turns the folly of the world, to
‘ his own advantage. As to this confederacy
‘ between you, and the ballad-singer, I own
‘ I never suspected the least of it; and indeed
‘ I still am at a loss, to think how you could
‘ bear the personal reflections especially, which
‘ he has thrown upon you. What was the mis-
‘ fortune of your form to him, that he should
‘ call you Doctor *Hunch-Back*?—‘ Why that
‘ is true enough (answered the Doctor) in that
‘ he exceeded my directions; and to call him
‘ to an account for it, is part of the business of
‘ this appointment. Every thing else was settled

‘ between us. We have hitherto met at our
 ‘ friend Mrs. *Brimstone’s*, who first negotiated the
 ‘ affair between us, and consented to take her
 ‘ share of the ridicule, to advance the common
 ‘ cause. She will be here to-night too, so that
 ‘ we shall have an agreeable set. I believe I
 ‘ hear him just come in. I directed him to en-
 ‘ quire for number one; do you shew him into
 ‘ the private room, and when the coast is clear,
 ‘ I’ll join you.’



C H A P. IX.

*CHRYSAL’s master starts at his own apparition.
 Interview between the Doctor, and a noted ballad-
 singer. The history of a famous ballad. All
 trades alike.*

THE person, my master was sent to meet,
 had something so uncommon in his ap-
 pearance, as instantly struck my attention. Every
 passion of the human heart was printed in his face
 so strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in
 all it’s force, while his every look and gesture turn-
 ed some vice, or folly, into ridicule. ‘ You enquire
 ‘ for number one, Sir!’ (said my master bowing
 with the profoundest respect :) ‘ I do, Sir,’ (an-
 swered the other, returning his bow, assuming
 his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner
 that would have extorted laughter from despair)
 ‘ enquire for number one.’

Though my master was no stranger to his
 talents, which he had often seen him display at
 the expence of others, this personal application
 of

of them to himself, threw him into such confusion, that in spite of his long-practised assurance, a blush broke feebly through his unimpassioned, lifeless face, and he had scarce power to shew him into the room. The ballad-singer seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any farther, at that time, for fear of frightening him away, but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, ‘I am come, my friend ‘ and brother in the Lord (said he) to enquire into ‘ thy spiritual estate, to give thee ghostly advice, ‘ and commune with thee, for a short space, ‘ for our mutual edification.’ —— The surprize and manner of this address, had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain bursting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion, into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated, when the Doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, ‘ I am glad to see you, Sir, (said he, taking him by the hand) and heartily congratulate you, on your success! you see I was not mistaken in my judgment! I knew what would take with the taste of the public! There is nothing pleases them so much, as a little profaneness, and ridicule of Religion! a fling at the Clergy never fails to raise a laugh.’—‘ I acknowledge your judgment, Sir,’ (answered the other, raising up his shoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor’s voice) ‘ and thank you, for your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ in opinion with you, as to the cause of my success, for I have never had the least fling at the Clergy, nor been guilty of profaneness.

‘ profaneness, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad ; the abuse of religion, by hypocrisy, and making the profession of virtue a sanction for the practice of vice, were the objects of my satyr, and the reception it has met with from the publick, shews that the people have a proper sense of such vices.’

The Doctor was so struck at the reflection of himself, when the other began to speak, that he started, in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him, till he had finished his discourse, which else he certainly would have done, while my master stood almost convulsed with laughter. But his triumph was not long ; for the ballad-singer turning short upon him, and instantaneously assuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the same manner, ‘ and you, Sir, (continued he, addressing himself to him) ‘ must have had ample experience, in the course of your business, that the taste of the town inclines quite another way, the most profligate in practice being the most pious in profession.’

This sudden transition from the Doctor, restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the silly look of my master, though he was not quite so much abashed as he had been before.

As soon as the Doctor could speak, ‘ How- ever I may doubt your opinion,’ (said he to the Ballad-singer) ‘ I acknowledge the irresistible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg a cessation of them, for a moment, till we talk of our business. I will not dispute about the cause of your success, but I think you need
‘ not

‘ not have fallen upon my person. My professions
‘ and practice surely were enough, with your
‘ own exaggerations ! Why then need you give
‘ me the opprobrious nick-name of *Hunch-back*,
‘ which has spread so, that I shall never get rid of
‘ it ? The very children haunt me with it, as I
‘ go along the streets.’

‘ Good Heavens (answered the other) how
‘ subject are the wisest men to the weakness of
‘ vanity ! I should have thought that you were
‘ long since proof, to any thing the world could
‘ say of you, or you would have given up your
‘ trade before now. As to my calling you this
‘ name, you must know, that the whole success
‘ of our scheme depended upon it ; for if I had
‘ not turned the ridicule against your person,
‘ the taste of the public is so gross, that I might
‘ have laughed alone, at your opinions. But
‘ what success have you had ? Do you find your
‘ flock gather upon this attack on their shep-
‘ herd ?’ — ‘ Why pretty well (replied the Doc-
‘ tor) pretty well. They seem to shew a proper
‘ sense of it. As for me, I appear affected at it,
‘ in a very extraordinary manner, that is solely
‘ upon your account ; and to convince them and
‘ all the world of the strength of my charity, I
‘ design to-morrow to offer up prayers, for your
‘ conversion, as being in a dangerous state of
‘ salvation, and then, on the merit of that, to
‘ propose a subscription, for the relief of two or
‘ three families, whom your example has led into
‘ ruin.’ — ‘ Bravo, Doctor ! (interrupted the
‘ other) tell me of profaneness again ! But I hope
‘ I am to have a share, in the subscription, as it is
‘ to be proposed, on my account ; at least, you
‘ will let me assist in the distribution of it.’ —

‘ Take

‘ Take care, my friend ! (returned the Doctor)
 ‘ another word of that kind, and I declare off
 ‘ the connection. I will have no body pry into
 ‘ my conduct, or interfere with my business !
 ‘ I did not ask any part of your gains, though
 ‘ you got so much in every company, where you
 ‘ sung your ballad ; nor did I speak a word in
 ‘ behalf of the other poor ballad-singers, you
 ‘ picked up about the streets, and set to sing for
 ‘ you, though the wretches complained, that you
 ‘ starved them.’

The ballad-singer perceiving that he had
 touched upon a tender point, thought proper to
 waive it, as he did not chuse to break off so
 advantageous a connection. ‘ As to that (said
 ‘ he) I did but jest ! I never interfere with any
 ‘ man’s matters ! But that’s true ! I have bad
 ‘ news to tell you ! *The clerk of the parish* sent
 ‘ me word yesterday, that understanding I sung
 ‘ my ballad to a psalm-tune, he let me know,
 ‘ that I must change my note directly, or he
 ‘ would order the beadles to whip me out of the
 ‘ parish, if ever I presumed to sing there again ;
 ‘ and to mend the matter, at the same time
 ‘ ordered me to make use of an old, black-guard
 ‘ tune, which he sent me, the vulgar stupidity
 ‘ of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which
 ‘ was never turned against the tune itself but
 ‘ solely against the prostitution of it ; which can
 ‘ never be so effectually attacked, as by repeat-
 ‘ ing the manner, exactly, in which it is sung.
 ‘ But where is our friend *Brimstone* ? I expected
 ‘ to have met her here.’

Just as he said this, my master was called out,
 where he found a venerable Matron, supported
 by

by two charmen, who enquiring in a feeble voice, for number *one*, he directly shewed her in to the company.



C H A P. X.

A venerable Matron compleats the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. MOMUS plays successively upon Doctor HUNCH-BACK, and Mother BRIMSTONE. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.

THE Matron, whom my master was handing into his friends, displayed one of those figures, which lose by the most forcible description. Her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almost out of every resemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almost concealed a piece of greasy flannel. Her gown, of the richest silk, flowed loosely round her, under a velvet cloak, lined with ermin; while her legs and feet, swoln out of all shape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapt up in flannel.

My master received this amiable creature from the chairmen, and stooping under as much as he was able to bear, of the burthen of her body, assisted her to limp, into the room. The contrast between her and the shabby skeleton of her supporter was so strikingly ridiculous, that
the

the moment they appeared, *Momus* burst into an immoderate fit of laughter, and turning to the Doctor, (who was not much less affected, though practice had given him such a mastery over the muscles of his face, that they never betrayed the passions of his heart;) ‘Behold (said he) the blessed fruit of thy ministry, and rejoice! See how the spirit assisteth the flesh, to struggle with the infirmities of nature.’ — And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, ‘Dear mother,’ (addressing himself to her) ‘give me your other arm; rest a little part of your weight, an hundred, or two, upon me! Come! Let me help into that great chair!’ — ‘Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones!’ (exclaimed she) ‘how you pull me along: you will tear me to pieces! Oh! oh!’ — ‘Never fear, mother! Never fear that! (answered he) Crazy as your carcass is, it will stick a little longer together! your friends are not ready for you yet.’ — ‘Go! go! you’re a wicked creature, a prophane wretch.’ — ‘Dear Doctor! I thought I should never see you more! I had a sad night of it; a most sad one indeed. But the spirit comforted me. Oh, if it were not for the comforts of the spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me! Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the sober bottle we cracked together, raised my spirits so, that I forgot all my pains. But I was not to be so happy long! Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way! — This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring companions came in, upon me, just as you went out, at the back-door! Well!

‘to

‘ to be sure they have a great deal to answer for !
‘ I was just beginning to read the pious exhortation, you left me ; when in they came, ‘ snatched the book out of my hand, and calling ‘ for the Ladies, insisted on my sitting with ‘ them ; so, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, I could not refuse : but alas ! I ‘ paid dearly for it this morning ! My poor ‘ bones ! and then my head ! my poor head is ‘ quite gone, quite gone ! I can bear nothing !——Oh what a difference there is between spending an evening in edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a pious ‘ friend or two, and these ranting riotous scenes ! ‘ though they behaved so like gentlemen, and ‘ were so good company, that there was no leaving ‘ them ! But it is all folly ! all vanity ! I am resolved I will leave it off ! I will not follow it ‘ much longer, I am resolved ! I’ll wean myself ‘ from this world, and think of nothing but a ‘ new life !——I hope the Baronet won’t use poor ‘ *Betsy* ill ! I did not like his refusing to taste ‘ the ratifia ! I should be ruined if any thing ‘ ailed her ! she is more enquired for than all ‘ the Ladies in the house.——And my Lord ! ‘ He is sweet company. But it is a pity he is so ‘ wicked ! He was going to burn my book of ‘ devout exercises ; and then, that profane song ‘ of your’s ! what need he sing that ! I wonder ‘ what pleasure people can find in prophaneness ! ‘ Where there is any enjoyment, it is another ‘ thing ; but this is being wicked, for wickedness sake. It is a great pity, for he is a very ‘ generous, fine gentleman ! He gave *Poll* ten ‘ guineas, this morning ! He’s very fond of ‘ *Poll* ; he always has her, when *Betsy* is engaged !

‘ gaged ! Oh ! oh ! shall I ever get rid of these pains ! when shall I be happy, in Heaven ? ’—

While she was running on thus, the Doctor was busied in writing a letter, to himself, as from a family in distress, for whom he intended to solicit a subscription the next day, from his congregation ; and my master was laying glasses on the table, and drawing the corks out of several bottles, so that *Mamus* alone attended to her, by the significant archness of whose look, it was easy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse, never so long ; but the Doctor’s turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

‘ I am sorry, my friend, (said he, addressing himself to her) to hear you complain so ! I left you, in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night, but I much fear, that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth, when he is full of wine ! A little is good, and rejoiceth the heart, but too much marreth the understanding, and letteth loose the secrets of the wife.’—‘ As for that there, dear Doctor, never fear me ! Since the blessed hour of my *call*, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter ; I never mention a word of it.—But, Doctor, what did you do with the young lady, whom you would see home, last night ? I would not refuse you, to be sure ; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head ! She is very young, and likely to do a great deal of business, therefore her *call* need not come, this
‘ great

‘ great while! It will be time enough some years
‘ hence! I had a great deal of trouble to bring
‘ her to; and now if you have spoiled her, I
‘ shall have all the work to do over again. No
‘ body knows the trouble and expence I am at,
‘ for the service of the public; No body knows!
‘ If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced
‘ to take up with common servant maids, and
‘ such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentle-
‘ women for them; Ladies of birth and educa-
‘ tion! and yet I am not regarded! no body
‘ thanks me! This is poor encouragement, to
‘ serve the publick, very poor indeed! But vir-
‘ tue is it’s own reward! That’s my comfort.
‘ I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a
‘ proper return, that is not my fault! Let the
‘ world answer for it! I do my part; and so my
‘ mind is at ease.’——

‘ That you do! (said *Memus*, while she stopped
‘ to drink) that you do! Your diligence never
‘ slackens! Come, fill your glass. Here’s to the
‘ reformation of manners, a work that we all
‘ labour in alike.’ — ‘ By your leave, good Sir,
‘ (interrupted the Doctor, with a look and tone
‘ of offended importance) not all alike I presume!
‘ I believe you will allow, that there is some dif-
‘ ference between your profession and mine, at
‘ least.’ — ‘ So then, (answered *Memu*) you are
‘ returning to the old point! I thought I had
‘ said enough to you on that head before! Dif-
‘ ference! aye! that there is indeed; but per-
‘ haps you are not sensible in whose favour that
‘ difference is! I sing a song, that makes peo-
‘ ple laugh, and put vice and folly out of coun-
‘ tenance, by shewing them in a ridiculous
‘ light, and this only for a trifling pittance of
‘ that

‘ that money which they devote to meer pleasure ;
 ‘ but you, by drawing horrors that never existed
 ‘ out of your own imagination, and preaching
 ‘ up doctrines, impossible to practise, frighten
 ‘ your poor deluded followers, out of every en-
 ‘ joyment of their lives, and pillage them of the
 ‘ money, that should support their families and
 ‘ pay their debts, under a pretence of imaginary
 ‘ charities ! This is the difference between us.’
 ‘ — Good lack ! good lack ! (interrupted the
 ‘ sage matron) how can people be such fools, as
 ‘ to fall out thus about nothing ! What signifies
 ‘ it where the difference lies, so you can both do
 ‘ your business ? It is just the same thing, as
 ‘ if my landlord here, and I, should enter into a
 ‘ dispute about the reputation of our houses.
 ‘ I thought I had made you both promise never
 ‘ to mention this matter any more ! Come, Doc-
 ‘ tor ! here is prosperity to all our business, with-
 ‘ out any such foolish distinctions.’—

The judgement of this mediation was too
 plain to admit of any dispute. The competitors
 filled their glasses, and shaking hands very cordi-
 ally, drank their friend’s toast. ‘ Well now there
 ‘ is some pleasure in this (continued she ;) things
 ‘ are like to go on well, when all parties agree ;
 ‘ but when some people fall out———you know
 ‘ the rest of the saying———But, my friend
 ‘ *Momus*, I have news for you ! That story of
 ‘ the young Lady, that you put in your ballad,
 ‘ has answered just as I said. The world thought
 ‘ it would blow me up ; but I knew better ! I
 ‘ never had a greater run of company in my
 ‘ life, than to enquire into that affair ; and they
 ‘ all of the right sort, your secret, grave, old,
 ‘ rich culls, just fit to do business with. At first

‘ I always deny it with the strongest oaths, and
‘ imprecations, and rail at you for inventing such
‘ a scandalous story ; but afterwards, as if I am
‘ put off my guard, by the liquor, I seem to
‘ place a confidence in their professions of secrecy
‘ and friendship, and with many tears, own the
‘ whole ; that is so far as to my having the
‘ Lady in my power ; and then the consequence
‘ is, that they all intreat me to let them see her
‘ (that is, singly, for such chaps always come
‘ alone ;) when, such is the pleasure in debauch-
‘ ing virtue, that beside making me an handsome
‘ present for my kindness, they leave no temp-
‘ tation untried, to prevail upon the Lady,
‘ whom they generally take to themselves upon
‘ a genteel settlement ; by which means I have
‘ got a pretty sum, and have besides had an oppor-
‘ tunity of providing for near a dozen of my wo-
‘ men, who were too well known, upon the town,
‘ to do any thing in the public way ; for this
‘ kind of customers have too great a regard for
‘ their characters, ever to mix in company, that
‘ might undeceive them ! So you see, Doctor,
‘ that I do not forget your instructions of doing
‘ all the good in my power ; and sure it is no
‘ small matter to rescue so many poor women,
‘ who were no longer capable of getting a gen-
‘ teel livelihood for themselves, from want and
‘ misery, and getting them a comfortable set-
‘ tlement for life, so that they have nothing to
‘ do now, but attend to you, and make their
‘ peace with Heaven. — Come ! here’s my
‘ service to you, my friend *Mamus* ; and if you
‘ can think of any other story of me, that can
‘ serve your turn, and get off another ballad,
‘ never spare me ! I’ll forgive you.’ — ‘ And so
‘ will

‘ will I too, (added the Doctor) though he should
 ‘ call me a worse name than *Hunch-back* ! Let
 ‘ them laugh who win. While our railing at
 ‘ each other in public, answers our own ends,
 ‘ we were fools to drop it ; as to the deceit in
 ‘ it, it is a virtue ; for sure it is better to live
 ‘ thus in friendship and charity with all man-
 ‘ kind, than to be the real enemies we seem ; and
 ‘ so, Sir, here’s my hearty service to you. And
 ‘ let us pursue our works, in concert, without
 ‘ any more of these broils. So let us drink
 ‘ about, for an hour or two ; for I must leave
 ‘ you early, being obliged to write an exhortation
 ‘ for the old dutchess, which I must carry her
 ‘ early in the morning, when she designs to visit
 ‘ her cousin, the colonel, who is under sentence
 ‘ of death in New-gate, for murder ; not that I
 ‘ think either that, or her preaching will have
 ‘ any effect upon him ; but she will try : and I
 ‘ do not care to disoblige her, as she is not only
 ‘ a good subscriber upon all occasions, but also a
 ‘ credit to our conventicle, which would never
 ‘ have risen into such esteem with the people, if
 ‘ some persons of quality had not brought it into
 ‘ fashion.’—— ‘ Why aye ! to be sure there is
 ‘ a great deal in that (added the Matron ;) fashion
 ‘ is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, I
 ‘ could never do the business I do. But since the
 ‘ nobility have made it the fashion to marry their
 ‘ mistresses, there is no great difficulty in bring-
 ‘ ing a private gentleman’s daughter into our
 ‘ way of life, as it gives her the only chance she
 ‘ can possibly have, of making her fortune and
 ‘ becoming a Lady ; for as to the example of
 ‘ those few, who married Ladies of virtue, for
 ‘ meer love, it was too old-fashioned, and ro-
 ‘ mantic,

‘mantic, to have any influence. But that’s true,
‘Doctor, I forgot to mention something to you
‘last night, that has given me great concern!
‘How could you be so indiscreet, as to accom-
‘pany that highwayman, to Tyburne, the other
‘day? And then to take his hand, and kiss
‘it, before all the people! Fie! it turns my
‘stomach to think of it? I do not know how
‘you can expect any lady will ever let you kiss
‘her lips after such a filthy action. Besides, it
‘is a scandal to all your congregation, that you
‘should appear so familiar with such low-lived
‘creatures, and seems a kind of an encou-
‘ragement to their crimes. If you had heard
‘what remarks two or three Ladies, who called
‘at my house yesterday evening, made upon it,
‘I am sure you would never do it again.’——
‘Go to, woman! Go to! (answered the Doc-
‘tor, with a contemptuous look) take the beam
‘out of thine own eye, before you find fault
‘with the mote in your neighbour’s! What
‘highwayman’s crimes are equal to yours? The
‘greatest danger of scandal, that I ever ran, has
‘been, in condescending to keep company with
‘you. In that indeed I may be said with too
‘great an appearance of truth, to encourage the
‘basest crimes.’——

The Matron, who with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this, even from her spiritual guide, but catching up her glass, in the madness of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, she flung it at his head with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground.—‘Woman!’ (sputtered she, as soon as her passion permitted her to articu-
late

late a word) ‘ Woman ! Call your women about
 ‘ you ! I scorn your words, you canting, hypo-
 ‘ critical, vicious wretch, who under the appear-
 ‘ ance of sanctity and religion, cheat the cre-
 ‘ dulous fools that mind you : you condescend to
 ‘ keep me company ! you ! a creature who would
 ‘ never have been taken notice of, had it not
 ‘ been for me ! Did I not point you out the per-
 ‘ sons, proper for you to work upon ! Was it
 ‘ not I that introduced you to those very people
 ‘ of quality, that now make you give yourself
 ‘ such airs ? Were they not most of them my
 ‘ acquaintances, and even indebted to me, for the
 ‘ rank they now enjoy ? I’ll make you know your-
 ‘ self, you scoundrel ! I will ! I’ll expose you to
 ‘ the world, and then see who will go to your
 ‘ conventicle, or subscribe to your sham charities !
 ‘ I’ll make you know how to treat your supe-
 ‘ riors for the future.’——

While the enraged Matron thus vented her
 fury, *Momus* and my master raised the Doctor
 from the ground, in a pickle not to be described.
 The glass had been thrown with such strength,
 that had not his skull been of a comfortable thick-
 ness, his labours would have been at an end ;
 however, it had made such a gash on his temple,
 that he was in a moment in a gore of blood.
 The sight of this terrified them all ! The Matron
 fainted (or pretended to faint) away, my master
 ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while
Momus supported the Doctor in his chair ; but
 the first sight of the wound convincing him, that
 it was not dangerous, he resolved to improve the
 accident, to that diversion, which was the great
 pursuit of his life.

‘ Good

‘ Good Heaven !’ (said he in a low voice, as if speaking to himself, and with all the appearance of distress) ‘ What will become of us all ! We shall all be ruined, by this unfortunate affair, even if we escape the death, which inevitably awaits the wretched Murderers.’ — ‘ O Sir !’ (said the Doctor, alarmed almost to despair) ‘ what do you think ? Am I a dead man ? Speak, I conjure you, give me some hopes !’ — ‘ Ala, my friend ! I wish I could ; but I must not flatter a man in your condition ! If you have any concerns in this life to settle, delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in your skull threatens immediate death. Heavens !’ (swooping and pretending to look earnestly) ‘ How his brain works !’ — ‘ O what shall I do !’ (exclaimed the terrified wretch) ‘ I cannot die ! I am not fit to die ! Oh ! that I had followed some honest trade, and never taken to this of preaching ! I might then have earned honest bread, as my fore fathers did, and escaped this miserable death, and the more horrid fate, that awaits me ! What shall I do ? What will become of me ? How can I even pray to that God, whom I have so often provoked by my hypocrisy, and crimes !’ —

My master, by this time, had wiped the wound, and seeing that though it bled so violently, from the number of little vessels, that are in that part, there was no fracture of the skull, and therefore no danger in it, ‘ Be comforted, Sir, (said he) you have time enough to prepare yourself for death ! I’ll ensure you from any danger, this time !’ — ‘ How, my dearest, best friend !’ (said the Doctor, catching his hand, and kissing it in extasy) ‘ Is my life safe ? Is not

‘ the wound mortal ?’—‘ Mortal ! no ! nor even dangerous ; if the surgeons do not make it so ! Give me leave to put a plaister to it, which I always have in readiness, in the house, in case of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel, for their women, in their liquor ; and I’ll engage that it shall give you no farther trouble. Many a guinea have I got by it, for when any such thing happens, I immediately slip on a full trim’d suit, a bag wig, and a sword, which a surgeon once pawned to me for a debt of two guineas, and up I go, do the job, take my fee, and come away as good a surgeon as the best ! never fear Sir, I’ll ensure you, from this scratch.’

The consolation, which this news gave the Doctor, is not to be expressed ! He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But *Momus*, who saw his sport with the Doctor thus cut short, soon brought her to herself ; for taking a glass of brandy, as if to hold to her nose, in the affected awkwardness of his hurry and confusion, he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he designedly neglected to blow it out, and so holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face, on fire. This instantly awoke her, from her swoon ! She shrieked out, when he, in the same affected confusion, flung the basin of bloody water, in which the Doctor’s wound had been washed, full in her face. This indeed quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and disagreeable, as that of my master or the Doctor ; the consequence of which was,

was, that the Doctor could not refrain from bursting out a laughing. ‘ Well, my friend (said he, taking her by the hand) ‘ it is but just, that ‘ you should share in the effects of your own rashness. But let there be no more of it. We ‘ have both been in fault perhaps; and so let us ‘ only be more cautious, for the future. What ‘ I have suffered was done by design, and had ‘ like to have been attended with dreadful consequences; your’s is all accidental and trifling.’ —

While the Doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself and setting the room to rights. *Momus* assisted the Matron, to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with so well acted an anxiety and care, that even she was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her, to his confusion; and being glad to get so well off an affair that might have ended so much worse, she complied with the Doctor’s advances to a general reconciliation, and so all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor’s wounds, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of *Momus’s* gang, who had attempted to assassinate him, in revenge of the contempt, into which he had brought their master.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song, in character, by each of the company, of which *Momus’s* was the most humorous, my master’s the grossest, the Matron’s the loosest, and the Doctor’s the most daringly

profane, perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this, the company broke up, when the Doctor having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then retired to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life, to marry.



C H A P. XI.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation, for her friend. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment, in her visit to the Prison. Her Grace's character.

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the *Exhortation*, which he was to carry to her Grace, the next morning; not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself: his time was too precious to be employed so: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other; as visiting his great proselytes, receiving, and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined, by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them

them voluntarily; but still to secure to himself, every degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious author, a degraded clergy-man, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went, upon the present occasion, and having him called from a night cellar, where he was holding forth, on religion and politicks, to a company of chair-men, he told him his business, and desired him to set about it directly. ‘Good God, Sir,’ (said the authour) ‘this is a very unseasonable time to set me upon such a work. From five this morning, till eleven at night, have I laboured incessantly; and now when I have just stepped out, to take a little necessary refreshment’— ‘Refreshment! (answered my master) Tell me not of refreshment, or any thing else! Either do my business, or say you will not! I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for less than I give you.’—— ‘That is impossible (replied the authour) if they are to live by it! I am sure what you give me scarce keeps me from starving!’—— ‘Starving!’ (returned my master) ‘So it appears indeed! when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and smell so strong of spirituous liquors, that it is offensive to sobriety to stand near you. I wonder you are not ashamed to be guilty of such intemperance! it ill becomes a man of morality and religion.’—— ‘Sir, Sir!’ (interrupted the authour, provoked beyond his patience) ‘Have some regard to truth, and reason, in what you say; and look at home, before you accuse me of intemperance! I laboured the

‘ whole day, without any other refreshment, or
 ‘ sustenance, than a mouthful of bread and
 ‘ cheese, and a draught of small beer; and now
 ‘ have had only a quarter of gin, in a pint of
 ‘ warm porter, to wash down half a pound of
 ‘ sausages, and you call this intemperance. If
 ‘ I may judge by appearances, you have not
 ‘ spent your evening on such fare.’—‘ How I
 ‘ have spent my evening,’ (returned my master,
 who, in spite of himself, felt the justice of the
 reproach) ‘ is nothing to the purpose! I am an-
 ‘ swerable for what I do! But this manner of
 ‘ talking signifies nothing! I must have this
 ‘ *Exhortation*, by eight in the morning! It will
 ‘ not take you up much time! You are suffi-
 ‘ ciently practised in the style: the matter is of
 ‘ little consequence! If you chuse to drink a
 ‘ glass of wine, here is half a crown, which I
 ‘ make you a present of! I would by no means
 ‘ have you stinted of any thing, that is pro-
 ‘ per.’—‘ Sir,’ (answered the authour) ‘ I am
 ‘ much obliged to you! I will take care, that it
 ‘ shall be ready at the time. You are sensible, that
 ‘ I never think much of any labour to serve
 ‘ you. I have finished all the pamphlets, you
 ‘ ordered, about the ballad’s-singer’s affair! Here
 ‘ they are! This is a letter from you, to him,
 ‘ that lays him flat! I have quoted half the fa-
 ‘ thers of the church against him!—These
 ‘ two are letters to you, upon the subject, one
 ‘ as from a great lord, the other from a reverend
 ‘ divine, setting forth the great benefits of your
 ‘ ministry, and exposing the profaneness and im-
 ‘ morality of his ballad.—This here is a silly
 ‘ vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the au-
 ‘ thour, from one of his ranting companions;
 ‘ and

‘ and this last is an address to the public against
‘ all those irreligious, and profane amusements,
‘ of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a master-
‘ piece! You see it is, as from myself, if you
‘ do not chuse to own it; though I do not know
‘ but it may have more weight with your ene-
‘ mies, if it appears, as from another. So you
‘ see I have worked hard to-day; and now I be-
‘ lieve we have done with Mr. *Momus*, and his
‘ ballad.’ — ‘ Why aye! pretty well, I believe
(said my master) — ‘ But hold. I have a thought
‘ just come into my head! You must know that
‘ the Parson of the Parish has sent for that re-
‘ probate, that *Momus*, and ordered him to alter
‘ the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have
‘ several of the same notes, with the Psalm tunes!
‘ Now as this is known, what do you think of
‘ writing a letter to me, as from the Parson, set-
‘ ting forth what he has done, and insinuating
‘ that it was by the direction of the squire; this
‘ will clinch the affair! After such an authority
‘ no one will dare to say a word in it’s behalf:
‘ beside, it will have a good look to be taken
‘ notice of, by such people.’ — ‘ That is true
(answered the authour) ‘ it will so, and the Par-
‘ son’s notice shall not be thrown away! I’ll do
‘ it, to-morrow morning; as soon as I send you
‘ the *Exhortation*.’ — My master then wished
him a good night, and left him to return to his
company, while he himself went directly home,
to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had scarce slept off his debauch, when he
was called to chaunt his matin song; after which
he did not fail to display the wound in his temple,
the occasion of which he promised to unfold to
his congregation, in the evening. This he did

to raise a curiosity that should gather his whole flock, to hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription, when their passions should be warmed by such an horrid attempt upon their pastor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the *Exhortation* was brought him from the authour, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up,) dressed and waiting for him: ‘Please your Grace
 ‘ (said he) here is the *Exhortation* your Grace
 ‘ desired of me; and I pray Heaven it may prove
 ‘ successful! I am afraid I have made your Grace
 ‘ wait, but I came the moment I had finished
 ‘ the first duties, of the morning. If your Grace
 ‘ pleases, I will do myself the honour to accompany your Grace! Perhaps my personal *Exhortation* and prayer may have more effect!
 ‘ My ministry has often been blessed with
 ‘ astonishing success.’ — ‘I am sensible of that,
 ‘ Doctor, (answered her Grace;) but this unhappy man is of such a strange temper, that
 ‘ I apprehend he might be guilty of some act
 ‘ of rashness, that might be dangerous to your
 ‘ person, if you were to go to him, without his
 ‘ consent; and that I am much afraid I shall
 ‘ hardly obtain. No longer ago, than yesterday,
 ‘ near as the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I find him engaged at cards, with
 ‘ his gaoler; and when I expostulated with him,
 ‘ on the danger of trifling away his few remaining
 ‘ moments, in so idle a manner (for I was apprehensive of exasperating him, if I spoke with
 ‘ greater severity) he only smiled, and answered
 ‘ me, with a passage, out of some play.’ —

‘Yes,

‘ Yes, please your Grace,’ (replied my master with a listless eye, and deep-fetched groan)
‘ Cards and plays are the bane of half the
‘ world: religion is quite neglected for them.
‘ The great work of reformation will never be
‘ compleated, till they are utterly abolished. As
‘ your Grace does not think it meet, that I
‘ should visit this unfortunate gentleman, in person, I am obedient to your Grace’s pleasure,
‘ however, I will offer up my prayers, for him;
‘ and my spirit shall assist your Grace’s pious endeavours! Not that I fear what man can do
‘ unto me: the angel of the Lord watcheth over
‘ me, or the stroke, that made this wound, had
‘ given me rest from my labours.’——

He then displayed the mark of mother *Brimstone*’s rage, and told her Grace so moving and circumstantial a story of his having been waylaid, and attacked by some of *Momus*’s riotous companions, that she implicitly believed him, and sympathized in his sufferings. He then gave her the *Exhortation*, which she was to deliver, to her unfortunate cousin, and seeing her uneasy, at being obliged to wait till the bank should be open, to get money to distribute among the poor wretches, in the prison, he accommodated her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace) just so much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor industrious family, in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me, that I changed my service, upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of my master; though from a view, I took of his heart, I saw that I had not been witness to half the mystery of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison, to her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity, among his unhappy fellow-prisoners while she waited for his rising, which was not till very late, as he had sat up the whole night before, at his beloved diversion of card-playing. When at length she got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He asked her, if she had procured him a pardon, and when she answered in the negative, and assured him that all such hopes were vain, he then told her, that he would dispense with the continuance of her visit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the *Exhortation* of my late master, which she with difficulty persuaded him to take, though from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistress, for I had the good fortune to remain in her possession, was so shocked at this insensibility, that she went directly home, and sought relief from the solid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart, in unfeigned prayer, for the conversion of him, and every other object of the divine displeasure; for though a misguided fervency of devotion had made her, in some measure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late master, nothing could lead her from the purest paths of true piety and virtue; nor did she suffer the extravagance of his pretended enthusiasm so far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by persons of her sex, and rank.



C H A P. XII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. CHRYSAL changes his service for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for an husband.

SHE, accordingly, went that afternoon to the house of a lady quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on set invitations to spend the evening, at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those children of fortune, who rise by the means, that ruin thousands. In her early youth she had sacrificed her virtue, to vanity, and yielded to the loose desires of the nobleman, she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniences he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaisance were all feigned; and the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, she immediately assumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it, in as high a manner, as if she had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error; but it was too late to remedy it; he therefore is forced to compound with her, for the indulgence he desires, by submitting to let her gratify her passion, for vain pomp and ex-

penfive ceremony, under the parade of which ſhe ſtrives to hide her obſcure original, as ſhe attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue, by a moſt rigid profeſſion of religion. Thus, her routs are the moſt ſplendid, and difficult of acceſs, of any in the town; no perſon being invited but thoſe of the firſt rank, nor any, who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and ſhe profeſſes herſelf a ſtrict follower of my late maſter, in his moſt extravagant opinions where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impoſſible to convey any notion, to you, of ſuch a ſcene as this, to which my miſtreſs carried me, it is ſo different from that ſphere in which you have acted. Suppoſe you ſee ſeveral hundred people of both ſexes, and of every age, dreſſed in all the profuſion and elegance of expence, and wearing diſſipation, and happineſs in their looks, aſſembled together, to ſpend the evening, in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverſe, and you ſhall behold a ſet of people, who have ſacrificed their real intereſt, and the peace of their minds, to the gratification of this, and ſuch like pleaſures, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly the whole is one continued ſcene of ſharping, mutual diſtruſt, envy, ſlander, and malevolence; the very few, who like my miſtreſs come there for meer amuſement, and are untainted with ſuch vices, being forced to ſubmit in ſeeming acquieſcence, to the torrent they are not able to ſtem.

In the courſe of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my ſervice; but as the ſtay I made, with my momentary poſſeſſors was ſo very
ſhort,

short, I shall wave giving any account of them, especially as the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest, who launch out of the common road of life, are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described, on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment; and hasten to the lady, in whose possession, I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who in the decline of life had over-looked the disparity of age and rank, and married her, solely to gratify his passion for her beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiscretion within bounds, but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the fashionable follies of the times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But though she eagerly followed every pursuit, that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank, into which her husband had lifted her, placed her upon a level, in point of society, with the best company, and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her; her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.

She had formed a variety of schemes to obtain this desired object, but still without success. At length, the very night I came into her possession, an accident suggested one to her, which she immediately put in execution, with the most sanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the first rank, in the company, the weakness of
whose

whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a person, to whose fidelity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company, with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye, with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought darted into her mind, that if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She lost deal ! She revoked ! She missed reckoning her honours ! In short she was so absent, that she was obliged to pretend a violent head-ach, and leave the company. As soon as she got home, she went to bed, where she spent the night in forming numberless projects, for accomplishing her design ; but still, the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the person, to whose care the nobleman was entrusted, disconcerted them all. At length, she resolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as she could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too rash, nor betray her design, before she had some prospect of success, she resolved to sound the person, before she applied directly to him.

Accordingly,

Accordingly, as soon as she got up, she wrote, him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a person had a certain affair to propose to him, for his concurrence in which he should receive immediately a thousand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, beside several other considerable advantages; and that what he was desired to do could be effected, without any possible loss, or danger to himself. This letter she sent by the penny-post, and desired the answer might be returned in the same manner, under a feigned direction, to the house of a person, in whom she confided.

Such a letter necessarily surprized the gentleman to whom it was sent. Though the greatness of the offer convinced him that some extraordinary piece of villainy was designed, yet, as he knew himself above temptation, he resolved to humour the scheme, till he should discover the whole of it, for the honest revenge of punishing a base attempt to seduce him into dishonesty. Accordingly he answered the letter directly, in such terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expressing his readiness to embrace any proposal, that should be so advantageous, when he should be satisfied, that the person who made it, was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took, as he desired. My mistress, whose eager imagination was too full of the desired object, to let her use any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which she signed her name, and in it explained her whole scheme of marrying the nobleman, by his assistance, enforcing her former offer, by a promise of continuing him, in
the

88 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

the agency of the estate, or rather indeed of sharing it with him, and desiring to meet him that evening either at her house, or any other place he pleased, to confer upon proper means, for bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loss how to act, on such an occasion: he immediately waited upon the nobleman, who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and shewing both the letters, desired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was struck with horror at a piece of villainy that did such dishonour to the sex, respect for the memory of the worthy man, whose name she bore, would not permit him to expose her to public insult; however, to prevent her making the like attempt elsewhere, he resolved to shock her, by a personal detection; accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be seen going to her house, but that if she pleased he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where she should enquire for him, by the name of Mr. *Trueman*. Such a prospect of immediate success made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and accordingly she prepared to attend the appointment, with the most sanguine expectation.

But his lordship had prepared a reception for her, which she never suspected. A little before the time, he went to the tavern, with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a closet, large enough for him, and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word that if any lady should enquire for Mr. *Trueman*, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged,

judged, her impatience brought her, rather before the time, when her imagined confederate shewing her up into the room, and placing her so, that every word she said might be heard, in the closet, he entered into a conversation with her, on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and by starting difficulties, to enforce it, with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As soon as his lordship thought she had said enough, he issued from his concealment, and looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given, as one of the reasons of her desiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation, at the sight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her design. Astonishment, shame, and confusion, struck her motionless and dumb. She just was able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a swoon upon the floor. Such distress naturally softened the resentment of the generous nobleman, to whom she had designed such an injury: he assisted to raise her, from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herself, instead of aggravating her distress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her that he would take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited such tenderness.

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit which would have borne her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears; and unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees
and

and kissed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expressed; who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined, it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and respect.

Her situation, when she got home, was truly pitiable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man; and in the agony of her grief resolved to leave this detested town next morning, and bury herself for ever, from the world, in her country-seat.

This resolution she held till next morning, when she actually set out for the country; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently seen her since, in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me; I was given to her coach-man, to pay the farrier, who took care of her horses; but he thought it more necessary to give me, in payment of a debt of his own to a man, who kept a beer-house, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a prosecution for entertaining a gang of street-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conscientious person, as he was on his way to a country assizes, where the lives of many depended on his good nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who,

who lost me that evening to a nobleman at an horse-race.



C H A P. XIII.

CHRYSAI, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of the industry, who brings him to an horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.

IN the three or four last changes of my service there was nothing remarkable. The progression was natural, and the events common: but I must own I was a good deal surprized at several occurrences in my present station, which were, in the proper course of things, so strange and unaccountable, that the most whimsical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The gentleman who had acquired me so easily on the road, and brought me to the *meeting*, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his skill, in the mysterious science of *chance*, supported by a good stock of assurance and personal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which design he had really so far succeeded, that he had lived, for several years, in the highest life, and maintained the appearance of the estate he talked of in his own country, by the sole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one resource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always

ways ready to redress the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than usual, so that the company were at the *post*, when he joined them. By their noise and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a croud of their own servants; their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the same vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations, with which those gentry receive them, at the door of a play-house or palace, so that I scarce knew how to believe my senses, when I recognized the faces of several persons of the most elevated station, and particularly, most of those among whom I had spent the evening, I described to you at the *club*, on my first coming to this part of the world.

As soon as the *bets* were made, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pick pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the post, just as they were preparing to *start*, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord,' (said he); 'Well, Jack, (replied the other) where have you been all day?' This was all the discourse they had time for, the horses going off, that moment: but on the strength of this, my master *backed* his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you, who have never seen any thing of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other,

other, without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their bets, and shouting for joy, at every vicissitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation, that he lost, to a noble duke, who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum besides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a severe stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and addressing the same groom, just as he come out of the *scales*; 'S blood, my lord, (said he) how could you *fling* me so. I am quite broke up: his Grace has *touched* me for 500, and the devil of the thing is, that I have been so *turn'd* down by a *bad run* of late, that I am quite out of cash, and have not a shilling to pay him.' — 'How could this be, (replied the groom) 'did I not give you the *word*? but you are such a careless son of a bitch.' — 'The word with a vengeance, (answered my master) you returned my *well*, but I have found it very ill.' — 'Aye, I guessed it was so, (added the groom) 'you were ignorant that we were *smoked*, and found it necessary to change the *lay*. Where the devil were you all this morning? taking a ride, I suppose: you will never leave off, till these rides bring you to a ride in a cart to Tyburn: but keep out of his Grace's way till the horses start, and we will *bring you home*, I will engage. He thinks he has all the secret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall pay for his entrance before we admit him to be *one of us*.' — This discourse passed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub*, and *settle* the next heat.

You

You are surprized at this familiarity, between my master, and the groom. When he first addressed him by the title of, *My Lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which in the freedom of this intercourse, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my astonishment at a nearer view, to see that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every, the meanest art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding against him, to take the place of their servants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condescension, the most abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their ancestors. Strange ambition, at a time when the interest and glory of their country called for their assistance.

As soon as the noble groom and my master were alone; ‘ Now Jack, what think you of my little *stun-orse*? (says his lordship.) You must know that I have *measured the foot* of them all, in this heat, and find that I *have the heels* by a *distance* at least; but the weights are above my *trim*. However, we have a remedy for that; look at this cap (taking one out of a chest, in which his running dress had been brought to the ground,) this is a *leaden skull*, and weighs above two *stun*; put this on your head, the thickness of your own skull will prevent its giving you the head-ach: aye, it fits you very well. Now I will wear this to the post, and just before we start, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow your’s to ride in, and then when I alight at the *scales*, after the heat is over, I will pull off your’s, as if to

‘ wipe my face, and give it to you to hold, who
 ‘ can return me this, to weigh in, and as I wear
 ‘ the same truffles, stuffed with handkerchiefs, in
 ‘ which I carried the weight last heat, they will
 ‘ never suspect us. — Ha, Jack, what say you
 ‘ to this ! match me this, among all your *Hi-*
 ‘ *bernian* tricks, if you can. Go your way :
 ‘ double with his Grace, and *lay* all you can,
 ‘ I’ll go with you ; but be sure to meet me at
 ‘ the post before, and at the scales after the heat,
 ‘ and not to blow the business, by being in too
 ‘ great an hurry.’

I see you wonder how his lordship should put
 such confidence in my master, as he seemed to
 know him so well ; but the truth was, my mas-
 ter’s character for courage was so well established,
 that it bore him through things every day of his
 life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for
 which a more timorous villain would have been
 pilloried ; and this made the other think him the
 safest person to entrust with the execution of such
 a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt exa-
 mining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to
 his lordship. — The finesse succeeded ; his lord-
 ship *beat every tail hollow* ; and my master not
 only *cleared* with his Grace, but also won confi-
 dably for himself, and his confederate beside.
 Things were carried on, in the same genteel
 manner, for the remainder of the meeting, at
 which there was a vast concourse of the best com-
 pany, the weather being very delicate, the turf
 in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so
 fair that *the knowing-ones were all taken in* ; and to
 make the pleasure compleat, though the croud
 was so great, there was no unlucky accident hap-
 pened, except to two of the noble grooms, one

96 C H R Y S A L : Or, *the*

of whom was borne down in the *crossing*, by the superior strength of a servant, who rode against him, and *slipped* his shoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horse's falling in the running.

It was on a sporting bet, on one of the by-matches, that I was lost that evening, to the nobleman, as I said, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new master's return to London, he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country seats.



C H A P. XIV.

CHRYSAI's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning *petite pleasures*. In the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAI comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs.

SOME publick occasion had brought a course more than usual, in those retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late; on which, with an easy air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that ' He had been detained
' by a very whimsical affair: a certain nobleman,
(said

‘ (said he) went into company last night, so *im-*
‘ *mensely* drunk, that having set in to play, and
‘ lost five thousand pound, he quite forgot it this
‘ morning, and refused to pay the money, till
‘ some person of honour, who was unconcerned
‘ in the matter, should vouch his having lost it
‘ fairly ; on which it was referred to me, and
‘ sorry I am, that I was qualified to give it
‘ against him.’ — ‘ How, my lord, by being a
‘ person of honour !’ (says the gentleman he spoke
to) — ‘ No, (replied my master, with a signi-
‘ ficant smile) not so neither, but by being un-
‘ concerned in winning it.’ — And then turning
short to another, ‘ But have you heard the news,
‘ my lord ? (said he.) Mr. ——— caught his
‘ wife yesterday taking a serious walk in Ken-
‘ sington gardens, with the gentleman whom we
‘ all know he forbid her keeping company with,
‘ some time ago.’ — A smile of general approba-
tion encouraged him so much, that he con-
cluded with saying, ‘ he wished he had himself
‘ been the happy delinquent so taken, as he doubt-
‘ ed not but the gravest bishop on the bench would,
‘ were he to speak his mind honestly.’

The prince had heard him without interrup-
tion ; but as soon as he had ended, turning to a
nobleman who stood near him, ‘ There can be
‘ no greater insult (said he, with a determined
‘ look and solemn accent) to a person who is
‘ appointed to put the laws of a country in exe-
‘ cution, than for any one, to boast of a breach
‘ of those, in his presence. For my part, if I
‘ am ever called by Providence to that station,
‘ it is my invariable resolution, that no man,
‘ how exalted soever in rank, who lives in open
‘ violation of any law, human or divine, shall
V O L. II. F ever

‘ever hold employment under me, or receive countenance from me.’

This rebuke damped my master’s spirits, as it struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abashed. But he soon recovered, and to silence the jests of his companions, and shew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to spend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minister of state.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politicks made me enter into this service with reluctance; but my prejudice was soon removed. My new master was just coming from his closet when I was delivered to him: he stopped to count the money, then putting it into his purse, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand, — ‘I must have all these finished against morning,’ (said he) that I may be able to read them over, before they are signed. I know they are a great many, but the business requires dispatch; and diligence and method overcome the greatest difficulties.’ — Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with several of the most eminent members of the community, who came, some to consult, some to advise, (for he refused not the advice of the meanest) and all to congratulate him on the success of his measures. — When the business and formality of this scene

scene were over, the company withdrew all but one gentleman, who desired some private conversation with my master. As soon as they were alone, ‘ I have done myself the honour to wait upon you this morning, (said the gentleman) to inform you, that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know whom you would have me return; for as I see that all your measures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am determined to support you.’

‘ I am much obliged to your good opinion, (answered my master) but I am resolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any person, by any other means than reason: all therefore that I have to ask is, that you will return an honest man; while he approves of my conduct he will certainly support me, and no longer do I wish to be supported.’

‘ What, sir! (replied the gentleman in astonishment) not desire to have your friends returned! Why, sir, is it possible that you can be a stranger to the intrigues that are forming against you, by a faction, who, when they had reduced the state to a meer *wreck*, like a cowardly, mutinous crew, flew in the face of their master, took the boat and made their escape to shore; and now, when you have not only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted her out for another voyage, with every prospect of success, are caballing to undermine and turn you away from the helm: not that they even pretend to arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they may have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. As this, sir, is notoriously the case, you must excuse the warmth of my honest zeal,

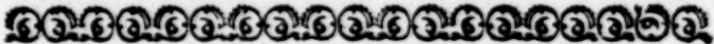
‘ when I tell you, that I think you must be guilty
 ‘ of very strange, very blameable remissness, if
 ‘ you neglect any possible method of disappoint-
 ‘ ing their pernicious designs.’

‘ My friend, (returned my master) I am too
 ‘ sensible of the truth of all you say, but hope
 ‘ there is no necessity for my having recourse to
 ‘ methods which my soul disapproves. With-
 ‘ out the assistance of any such did I (to pursue
 ‘ your mode of speech) first point out to our
 ‘ master, and the rest of the ship’s company,
 ‘ the errors in their steering, the rocks they were
 ‘ ready to run upon, and the way to avoid them.
 ‘ Without any such did I take the helm in that
 ‘ dangerous time, when they fled from the wreck,
 ‘ and worked her out of the breakers they left her
 ‘ among, and without any such will I support
 ‘ my place at the helm, or resign it, for in my
 ‘ opinion, no end can justify improper means.

‘ Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer
 ‘ gives me pain. Do not mistake me; I am
 ‘ sincerely obliged to you for that good opinion
 ‘ which dictated it to your honest heart; but the
 ‘ truth is, that any member of the community’s
 ‘ having the power of making such an offer,
 ‘ proves such a degeneracy in our constitution,
 ‘ as threatens its overthrow in the end. A par-
 ‘ liament should be a representative of the people;
 ‘ but how can it be said to be that, if the people
 ‘ are not at liberty to chuse whom they please to
 ‘ represent them; beside, such a manner of *no-*
 ‘ *minating* disappoints the end, as well as it de-
 ‘ stroys the essence of a parliament, as it is too
 ‘ probable that the nominator shall stipulate
 ‘ conditions with *his* member, that may not only
 ‘ take away his power of voting according to the
 ‘ dictates

' dictates of his judgment and conscience, but
 ' also enjoin such as may be directly opposite to
 ' both, and injurious, if not destructive, to that
 ' country, which he thus *nominally* represents.
 ' A parliament therefore to be *free* should be
 ' *freely* chosen, no man having it in his power to
 ' do more than give his own vote; and such a
 ' parliament, to keep up to the excellence of its
 ' nature in its first institution, should not con-
 ' tinue longer than one session; but a new one
 ' be called as often as the occasions of the state
 ' should require it, once in every year at least,
 ' for so often does the interest of a nation de-
 ' mand, that its guardians should meet. Such
 ' a parliament, sensible of the shortness of the
 ' duration, and nature of the tenure of their
 ' power, would take care never to act against
 ' the interest of their constituents; or if human
 ' frailty should err, their time would be too short
 ' to establish the evil, and as it would be im-
 ' possible for them to be chosen again, the next
 ' parliament would remedy the mischief. — Such
 ' should a British parliament be! such I hope it
 ' will be! It is every honest Briton's duty to hope
 ' so; and not only that, but to endeavour to
 ' make it so; nor shall any act of mine ever
 ' seem to countenance a practice, that contradicts
 ' this principle. By speaking and acting in strict
 ' conformity to the dictates of *my* judgment and
 ' conscience, have I hitherto succeeded, con-
 ' trary to the apprehensions of many, beyond
 ' the expectations of all; and the same means
 ' and none other will I ever pursue.' — ' Heaven
 ' bless your pious intentions;' (said the gentle-
 ' man, taking his hand and kissing it in a rapture,
 ' tears of joy running down his face) ' heaven
 ' will

' will bless them: happy sovereign in such a
' servant; happy Britain in such a guardian.'—
Saying this, he took his leave of my master, who
went directly to wait upon his.



C H A P. XV:

CHRYSAI's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason, for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSAI enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.

THE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man, before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but we see through all disguise, and read the real character, in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened the royal, in his breast.—'Sire, (said my master, addressing him, with the most respectful sincerity) here are the dispatches which you ordered me to draw up yesterday: since I had the honour of your commands then, I have received some farther intelligence, that confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, but not deterred by the repulse which they justly met with from you, those people have the confidence to make a new attempt, and think to
' obtain

‘ obtain by menaces, what was refused to their treaties ; but the event will convince them, that it is more difficult to a generous mind, to deny the suppliant, than repulse the insolent. Strong in the natural strength of your dominions, and stronger in the love of your people, you are able to assert your own cause, against all the powers of the world, on that element, which nature has pointed out, for the scene of your triumphs ; nor will you permit any other to interfere with you, on it. All you require is a neutrality, where you are intitled to assistance. This shews your confidence in your own strength, and your contempt of them. But even this contempt will not overlook any disrespect to yourself, any partiality to your enemies. Let them either behave themselves as friends, or profess themselves foes. — This choice is indifferent to you. As to their complaints, their own unjust actions are the cause of them, and when this is removed, they will cease of course. Till then to seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist in the crime, is an insult upon justice and mercy ; and for their menaces, they are beneath the notice of an answer.’

‘ Be it so,’ (replied the reverend monarch, the indignation of his honest heart flashing from his eyes ;) ‘ be it so : you speak the sentiments of my soul.’ — Then turning to a favoured subject, who stood near him, ‘ It is a pleasure to me to transact business, with this man, (continued he ;) he makes me understand him, and does not perplex my soul, with a vain maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with open honesty and boldness.’ — The honour of this

testimony warmed the heart of my master with a
 joy, that over-paid his labours, and added new
 fire to the assiduity of his soul. As soon as he
 went home, he found a person waiting for him
 whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair
 of the greatest importance. — ‘ I have sent for
 ‘ you, my friend, (said my master) on an oc-
 ‘ casion, which, I am sensible, will give joy to
 ‘ your heart. You are to command a separate
 ‘ body of the troops, which have been sent to pro-
 ‘ secute this necessary and just war, in America.
 ‘ I need not put myself, nor you, to the pain of
 ‘ repeating the causes of the shameful inactivity,
 ‘ to give it no severer name, by which this war
 ‘ has been drawn into such a length; you know,
 ‘ and will avoid them. You will not wear out
 ‘ opportunity, in making unnecessary prepara-
 ‘ tions for improbable occasions: you will not
 ‘ damp the ardour of your soldiers by delay, nor
 ‘ prolong a burthensome war, to enrich yourself,
 ‘ with the spoils of your country. You are
 ‘ young, active, and brave: such a commander
 ‘ only do British soldiers want, to lead them to
 ‘ victory. You have no senior, no superior here,
 ‘ to restrain the efforts of your spirit, by timid
 ‘ caution; at the same time, that your judgment
 ‘ will supply the place of experience, and pre-
 ‘ vent your falling into the misfortunes, which
 ‘ self-sufficient, brutal rashness has made so fatal
 ‘ to others. Your instructions are comprized in
 ‘ a few words, — make the best use your judg-
 ‘ ment shall direct you, of the forces entrusted
 ‘ to your command, to defend the property, and
 ‘ avenge the wrongs of your fellow-subjects;
 ‘ and to vindicate the honour of this abused na-
 ‘ tion. — I know whom I speak to, and there-
 ‘ fore

‘ fore I say no more : proceed, my friend, my
‘ soldier, answer my expectations, and you will
‘ fulfill the wishes of your country.’ — Saying
thus, he embraced him tenderly, and as he went
with him to the door, happening to look into
the street, he saw a number of disabled soldiers,
who had placed themselves before his window,
to solicit relief for their miseries. — ‘ O, my
‘ friend, (continued he, grasping his hand) be-
‘ hold those victims of the unjust ambition of that
‘ enemy, against whom you go; and let the
‘ fight add the wings of an eagle to your
‘ haste, to tear down a power, which has been
‘ thus fatal to so many of your brave countrymen,
‘ to prevent any more from suffering the like
‘ evils, from the same cause. *The man who does*
‘ *not use, to the best advantage, the means entrus-*
‘ *ted to him by his country, to destroy its enemies,*
‘ *is guilty of all the evils, which those enemies may*
‘ *afterwards do to his country.* — Shall I beg a
‘ favour of my friend? distribute this money
‘ (giving him an handful of Guineas) among
‘ those men, as from yourself. If it is not enough
‘ to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor
‘ for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the
‘ residue in your hands, to apply to the same use
‘ on the first occasion you meet. This much will
‘ relieve their real wants, and more might only
‘ tempt them to excess. The invidiousness of
‘ my station makes it improper for me to do even
‘ an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for
‘ ostentation. Adieu, my friend, heaven guard
‘ you in the day of battle, and guide your sword
‘ to victory.’

I here quitted the service of this great man,
the instances of whose conduct, which I have

given, make any farther character of him unnecessary.

The regard, with which the minister had addressed himself to my present master, raised my curiosity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but I might leave his possession directly: but my fears were agreeably disappointed; for the number of guineas, given to him by my master, exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed his charitable commission, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee, to his beloved mother, and kissing her hand in rapture, ‘O, madam, (said he) congratulate
‘ your happy son. My prayers at length are
‘ heard, and I am blessed with an opportunity
‘ of proving to the world, my attachment to
‘ the service, my ardour for the glory, of my
‘ country: I am honoured with a separate com-
‘ mand, in America, where heaven fires my
‘ soul with an assurance, that I shall have the
‘ happiness of crushing the injurious power of
‘ our enemies, in the very place where it first at-
‘ tacked my country; where it has too long
‘ triumphed in its wrongs.’

‘Heaven bless my son,’ (replied the matron, as soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak) ‘heaven guard my son,
‘ and bless his pious hopes. Let me only live
‘ to see him return with the honour of having
‘ done his duty, and I shall die contented. But
‘ why do I say this, as if my heart felt a doubt
‘ for

‘ for him? my son will never fail to do his duty;
‘ he will never fall from the paths of honour,
‘ however dangerous, nor seek to colour over
‘ with specious arguments the loss of his honour.
‘ He will not make his mother ashamed of hav-
‘ ing borne him, nor bring her grey hairs with
‘ disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the
‘ instructions which have formed his youth, I
‘ know the principles of his heart, I know my
‘ own blood better. — But, O my son, remem-
‘ ber also, that prudence distinguishes true cou-
‘ rage from rashness; that your country has now
‘ a peculiar interest in your life, and that you
‘ betray its trust, if you lose it by any unnecessary
‘ boldness. Remember your aged mother, who
‘ hangs weeping over her grave, till you return.
‘ Remember your ——’

‘ O, my mother, no more! recal not ideas,
‘ which my present situation requires me to for-
‘ get. Fear not, your son will not be a dis-
‘ grace to the honest race from which he is
‘ sprung. He will do his duty as a soldier, a
‘ British soldier, and as a man, sensible of the
‘ obligations of reason and religion. Whether
‘ I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this
‘ hand again, is only known to heaven; but it
‘ is in my power to promise, that the name of
‘ your son shall never raise a blush in the face
‘ of his mother, nor his actions require the pal-
‘ liation of excuse from his friends. If life is to
‘ be short, let it be well filled: one day of glory
‘ is better than an age of idleness, or dishonour.
‘ Adieu, my mother; your blessing is a shield
‘ to the head, a support to the soul of your son;
‘ one tender parting more, and then my heart
‘ must be resigned to other cares.’ — ‘ Heaven

‘ bleſs ! heaven guard my ſon !’ and then, as he went from her, ‘ O glory, what a tribute doſt thou exact from wretched mortals !’

My maſter paused a moment to wipe away the pious tear, which filial duty owed to ſuch a parting, and then haſted to another ſcene of equal tendereſs.

Mutual merit had improved the inſtinctive liking of youth, between my maſter and a young lady, whoſe elevated rank and large fortune were her leaſt recommendations, into the ſtrongeſt attachment of real love. As reaſon could make no objection on either ſide, parental approbation gave its ſanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day, that was to ſeal their bliſs. Hard taſk upon a favoured lover, to communicate to the choſen of his ſoul, the order which was to damp riſing expectation, by this delay ; and tear him from the inſtant hope of that happineſs, which he had ſo long been ſuing for. But honour, and the ſervice of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory, to which his ſoul aſpired.



C H A P. XVI.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantick style. CHRYSAL quits the service of the general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.

AS soon as he had recovered from the softness, into which his mother's tenderness had melted him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper, in their present situation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that shewed her, his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears: 'What (said she, looking earnestly at him) can make a troubled gloom overcast that face, where hope and happiness have, for some time, brightened every smile. Can any thing have happened to disturb the prospect so pleasing to us! Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy, or unable to share with you! it must be so: that faint, that laboured smile betrays the sickness of your heart.'

'O dearest wish of that heart, (replied he, taking her hand, and kissing it in extasy) how shall I merit such perfection! It is impossible: I am unworthy: but let my soul thank heaven for blessing it, with this opportunity, of rising nearer to a level with your virtues; a hope that will soften the severity of absence, and make the delay of happiness seem shorter.'

'What

110 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

‘ *What canst thou mean?*’ (said she, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy)—‘ *Delay! — I understand thee not — I urge not.*’——‘ Mistake not, O my love, the inconsistencies which anguish extorts from my bleeding heart — How can I say it! — Our happiness is delayed, — delayed but to be more exalted — Honour, the service of my country call.’——‘ *And am I to be left?*’——‘ But for a time, a little time, the pain of which shall be overpaid, by the joy of meeting, never to part again. — O spare my heart, restrain those tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to such a trial. — The interest, the glory of my country demand my service, and my gracious master has honoured me with a station, in which my endeavours may be effectual, to accomplish his commands — nay, must be effectual, where love urges duty, where you are the inestimable reward.’——‘ *If that reward is all you seek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is amply sufficient! Quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire, and seek true happiness in content.*’——‘ O spare my struggling heart; what can I, shall I do! — The trial is too great for human fortitude! Assist me, glory! help, O my country! support me through this conflict, and I shall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deserve thee.’——‘ *Go! go! and heaven guide and guard your steps!*’ (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears) ‘ *I shall no longer struggle with the sacred impulse, that leads you on, to glory.*’——Then turning to him, ‘ *But remember how you leave me! — Think what I feel, till you return! — What I must be, should*’——— The horror of this

this thought made her unable to say more: he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with hers, as her head reclined upon his bosom, in the tenderness of a chaste embrace, 'This is too much, (said he) this is too much! — I never can repay this excess of goodness.' — Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthusiasm——'Heaven gives my soul (continued he) this foretaste of happiness, as an earnest of success; I go to certain victory: the prayers of angels must prevail.'—Saying these words, he rushed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier state: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour, that had enabled him to give that proof of his resolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears, to such a sacrifice.

But glory and the interest of his country soon dissipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of such painful scenes of tenderness, resumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking, with the most indefatigable assiduity. But I continued not in his possession to see the effects of these cares; such objects as I was designed for, occurred too frequently, to the first of whom, it fell to my lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established, on the principles of virtue, than there. To select any one instance would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head, to raise the trophies of the *French*, in *America*. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort, which nature
really

really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure, as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he *changed* me for a quatern of that liquid fire; the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be satisfied with so little. Quatern followed quatern, till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor, when his good-natured host had him kindly laid to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it, himself. — The scenes I saw in this service, were all of the same kind, but I was soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me, as a present to an officer of the customs, that very night. — By this faithful steward of the publick I was next morning given to the factor to a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in lace, in *Flanlers*, whither he was just going, on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader, I went as far as *Harwich*, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was *honest Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person, who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. ‘ I wish (said the father) that we were safe at our journey's end; for though I have planned matters so well, that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious.’ —

‘ I do

‘ I do not understand you, (replied the son :) I
‘ thought this was but such a journey as I have
‘ often known you take, and that you were go-
‘ ing no farther than *Holland*, on some business
‘ of her Grace’s.’ — ‘ She thinks so indeed, (re-
‘ turned the father) nor would I have her think
‘ otherwise as yet : but I do not design ever to see
‘ her face more. I am now, my son, arrived
‘ at the height of my wishes, being possessed of
‘ wealth, beyond my most sanguine hopes. For
‘ you must know, that having gained the confi-
‘ dence of this woman, by many services, I at
‘ length suggested it to her, that the best way
‘ for her to make the most profit of the
‘ great wealth she has amassed, would be
‘ to send it to *Holland*, by some trusty per-
‘ son, who should bring it over again from
‘ thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it
‘ here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies
‘ given for the defence of *Germany*, now that
‘ her’s, and the intrigues of some other great
‘ persons, had baffled the schemes of economy,
‘ which the managers had attempted in vain to
‘ establish, and obliged them to come into our
‘ own terms. — She took the hint, for it was a
‘ most plausible one, and immediately insisted
‘ that I should negotiate the affair for her, giving
‘ me one hundred thousand pounds for that pur-
‘ pose.

‘ This was what I wanted, and had been al-
‘ ways scheming for, having ever remitted my
‘ money, as fast as I could make any, into *Hol-
‘ land*, that I might be able to seize such an
‘ happy opportunity as this, at a moment’s
‘ warning.’ — ‘ But you cannot think, father, of
‘ staying

114 C H R Y S A L: Or, the

‘ *staying in HOLLAND. You will be immediately
pursued thither.*’ — ‘ In *Holland*, fool ! no, nor
‘ in the smook of *Europe* at all ! I design to set
‘ out for *Africa*, without a moment’s loss ; and
‘ hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that
‘ of any Christian power, before she can suspect
‘ any thing of my flight. And it will heighten
‘ the pleasure of my success, to think, that while
‘ I am sailing to a land of circumcision, she will
‘ sit in anxious expectation of my return.’

‘ *But, father, is not it injustice to deceive her
confidence, and rob her of so great a sum of
money ?*’

‘ Injustice fool ! injustice to a christian ! Say
‘ such another word and I discard you, disclaim
‘ you forever ! Thy converse with these *Gentiles*
‘ has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with
‘ them ; what do we serve them ; what do we
‘ bear their abominations, their insults for, but
‘ to make our own advantage of them ? Fools !
‘ vain presumptuous fools ! to imagine that any
‘ benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them ;
‘ or change the innate hatred of our souls, to a
‘ sect, that has been the cause of our dispersion
‘ and ruin. But to silence thy weak scruples
‘ about injustice, with a word, have I not the
‘ authority of our holy Scripture, the example
‘ of our great prophet *Moses* himself, for what I
‘ do, who borrowed the wealth of the *Egyptians*
‘ without a design of ever returning them, to pay
‘ the children of *Israel*, for the labours they had
‘ been put to by their oppressors, and enrich them
‘ when they should arrive at the land of pro-
‘ mise ? — And is not this my case ? have I not
‘ laboured hourly for this Gentile woman with-
‘ out payment ? Did she not join to defraud our
‘ people

‘ people of a greater sum than this, to which
 ‘ my mite was added too, under the pretence of
 ‘ procuring us a settlement! and did she not
 ‘ refuse to return it, when the attempt failed of
 ‘ success. What then is this, but a just retali-
 ‘ ation? a fulfilling of our law, that says, *An*
 ‘ *eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth?* And do
 ‘ I not want her wealth to make my settlement
 ‘ happy, in the land of my forefathers?’ — The
 son had too high a reverence for the judgment of
 his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the
 conviction of arguments so conclusive. By this
 time the wind and tide served for us; we arrived
 in *Holland* without any thing remarkable, except
 I should take notice to you of the sordid hypocrisy
 of my master as such, who, not to violate the
 customs of his race, made a pretence of poverty,
 to get his passage without expence.



C H A P. XVII.

*They arrive at the HAGUE. Political conversa-
 tion between a DUTCHMAN and a JEW. They
 differ in opinion. AMINADAB leaves his friend
 VAN HOGAN in great distress.*

AS soon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my
 master sent his son to prepare for their im-
 mediate departure, while he went himself for a
 moment, to speak to one of the principal mem-
 bers of the states.

There was little ceremony between a Dutch-
 man and a Jew, but entering directly upon busi-
 ness, ‘ My friend *Aminadab*, (said his *mightiness*)
 ‘ I am

‘ I am glad to see you ; I hope you have brought
 ‘ us good news ; and that there is a stop put to
 ‘ the insolence of those *English* pirates, who, in
 ‘ a manner, block up our ports, and have al-
 ‘ most ruined our trade.’

‘ Really, my friend *Van Hogan*, (replied my
 ‘ master) I am sorry that I cannot give you any
 ‘ satisfactory account of that affair. For such is
 ‘ the perverseness of the people in power there
 ‘ at present, that they will not listen to any ar-
 ‘ guments.’ — ‘ *Will they not take money?*’ —
 ‘ No, indeed ; nor does the boldest of us all
 ‘ know how to offer it with safety, it was re-
 ‘ jected with such indignant rage the last time ;
 ‘ though in truth the offer was a tempting one.
 ‘ I have seen the day, and that not very long
 ‘ since, when half the sum would have done
 ‘ twice as much. But matters are most strangely
 ‘ altered of late. They have got a manager,
 ‘ who neither drinks, nor games, keeps running
 ‘ horses, nor whores, nor lives above his private
 ‘ fortune, and therefore has not such pressing de-
 ‘ mands for money, as used to make our negoti-
 ‘ ations go on so smoothly with others for-
 ‘ merly.’

‘ *Death! what shall we do? Is the whole court
 ‘ corrupted by this example? are they all infected
 ‘ with such a strange madness?*’

‘ No, it is not gone so far as that yet ; and it
 ‘ is to be hoped, that the example of a few will
 ‘ not be able to do so much ; and that when the
 ‘ novelty of this humour wears off a little, it
 ‘ will go out of fashion insensibly, and things re-
 ‘ turn to their old course. This is supposing the
 ‘ worst, that the engines, now at work to over-
 ‘ turn this new *set*, should miscarry.’

‘ But

‘ *But what must we do in the mean time? We shall be ruined before that may happen! we must declare war, and do ourselves justice.*’

‘ *But may not the remedy there be worse than the disease? Are your affairs in such a condition as to entitle you to take such a step? Consider what a mighty naval force they have at this time! consider how you will be able to resist it.*’

‘ *That is the thing, the only thing that has kept us quiet so long! But something must be done; another AMBOYNA affair, or some such stroke, must bring us satisfaction, and revenge too.*’

‘ *Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: this is no time for such strokes; nor are the present governors such people as those, who suffered them so tamely: they will be apt to return the stroke, in a manner that may be attended with consequences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate those haughty Islanders, as much as you; except some few particulars, the sense of the whole nation has ever been against us; nor would they suffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourselves so well of the favour of those few, as to get the command of almost all the money in the kingdom into our own hands, so that now they dare not provoke us too far; though I own I do suspect that the design of the present rulers, is to get out of our power as soon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their designs.*’

‘ *But all this time this talking signifies nothing to our affairs; what do they say to them? What reasons do they give for encouraging these outrages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of justice?*’

‘ *In*

‘ In truth, my friend, a great many, that are
 ‘ more just than agreeable; more easily exclaim-
 ‘ ed against than refuted. In answer to your
 ‘ alledging the faith of treaties, they insist that
 ‘ they strictly observe the sense and spirit of them,
 ‘ while you only cavil about the words, it being
 ‘ absurd to think that any nation should bind up
 ‘ its own hands, in the manner you pretend; or
 ‘ even if that was the meaning of the treaty, at
 ‘ the time when it was made, that your abuse of
 ‘ the indulgence given by it, makes it necessary
 ‘ to retract it now: and they express the most
 ‘ indignant surprize at your insisting so strongly
 ‘ upon one article, which at best is but doubtful,
 ‘ and would be in itself absurd, in the sense you
 ‘ wrest it to, while you break through so many,
 ‘ the meaning of which you do not even pretend
 ‘ to dispute.’

‘ *Then we will dispute no longer about them; we*
 ‘ *will enforce their observation, by the same methods*
 ‘ *that originally obtained them.*’ — ‘ Aye, if that
 ‘ could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you;
 ‘ I am afraid those means are out of your power;
 ‘ you were then really *mighty states*, respectable
 ‘ for your power, and dreadful for your valour:
 ‘ but the case is now altered, I need not say
 ‘ how.’

‘ *Ingrateful ENGLISH! to forget how we rescued*
 ‘ *them from popery and slavery, but the other day;*
 ‘ *had it not been for us they would, at best, have*
 ‘ *been but slaves to FRANCE.*’

‘ The very charge they make against you,
 ‘ who, they say, could never have resisted the
 ‘ power of *Spain*, or established your liberties,
 ‘ if their queen *Elizabeth* had not hearkened to
 ‘ the cries of your poor, *distressed states*. As for
 ‘ the

‘ the affair you mention, though they do not
‘ deny the benefit, they take off from the obli-
‘ gation, by attributing it to self-interested mo-
‘ tives, as they say, you were convinced that if
‘ any thing happened to them, you must sink
‘ of course: beside, that you have been amply
‘ paid for this, by the immense expence of blood
‘ and treasure with which they established your
‘ barrier, in the late wars, which they evidently
‘ entered into on your accounts, to the neglect of
‘ their own interest.

‘ In a word, my friend, there is so much
‘ truth in what they say, that I would not advise
‘ you to insist upon these points any more.’ —
‘ Confound the points! and the memories that rip
‘ them up so! What shall we do? I myself lost a
‘ ship last week, worth fifty thousand ducats;
‘ though all the precautions possible were taken; as
‘ sending her papers by another ship, supplying her
‘ with false bills of lading, false clearances, false
‘ consignments; in short, every thing that human
‘ art could devise.’

‘ And I know she was as well sworn for to pre-
‘ vent her being condemned, as human conscience
‘ could swear; but nothing could elude the cap-
‘ tors, or deceive or influence the judges; but
‘ was she not ensured?’

‘ Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by en-
‘ suring, except the ships are to be cast away: O
‘ my ship! my ship! I will have war.’ — ‘ And
‘ then all your ships go at once.’ — ‘ I am di-
‘ stracted! what shall we do?’

‘ My friend, the best, the only advice I can
‘ give you, is to put a stop to this trade, and
‘ open your eyes to your true interest. I hate
‘ the *English* as much as you possibly can; but
‘ that

' that should not make me ruin myself to be re-
 ' venged on them : they are your only natural
 ' allies ; they first delivered, they still sustain you,
 ' nor can you support the very name of an inde-
 ' pendent state without them. Provoke them not,
 ' therefore, too far ; I wonder how they have borne
 ' so much already ; preserve a fair neutrality ; they
 ' despise your assistance, and desire no more : nor by
 ' your avarice force them to measures, that must end
 ' in your ruin. If you break with them, whom will
 ' you apply to ? The *French* have given you many
 ' proofs, that they wait only for an opportunity to
 ' enslave you : *Spain* has at length learned its own
 ' interest, and will not break with the only power,
 ' whose friendship can be of real service to it : and
 ' this very war gives a sufficient demonstration of
 ' *Austrian* faith and gratitude.

' This is the obvious situation of things, and
 ' must strike a person at the first view : but a
 ' moment's thought will shew them, even in a
 ' stronger light. For to grant that *France* and
 ' *Austria* both may be sincere in their professions
 ' to you ; does not reason shew you the impru-
 ' dence of trusting to promises, which it is more
 ' than probable they will not be able to perform.
 ' For if you will but divest yourself of passion
 ' and prejudice for a moment, you will see that
 ' the measures entered upon, and the means used
 ' to carry them on, by the *English* at this time,
 ' must, in all human appearance, disappoint the
 ' schemes of their enemies, and retort upon their
 ' own heads, the ruin they meditated for others.
 ' Indeed the prospect is such, that it is impossible
 ' to say where things will end : every interior
 ' fund is exhausted ; every external resource cut
 ' off ; their own trade is absolutely ruined ; the
 ' trea-

‘ treasures of *Spain*, which supplied them in their
‘ last wars, are no longer at their command; so
‘ that I can foresee nothing less than their be-
‘ coming bankrupts, not only to themselves, but
‘ also to every foreign state, and individual, whose
‘ avarice of present gain has made them supply
‘ their wants.

‘ Nor is this distress the effect of chance, or of
‘ an unfortunate campaign, which the success of
‘ another, or some lucky hit, may restore. It is
‘ the natural consequence of system of mea-
‘ sures, plan’d with judgment, and prosecuted
‘ with vigour, by a minister who will not fail to
‘ improve it to the most solid advantage. And
‘ this I say, not solely from my own opinion.
‘ You know I have had connections with per-
‘ sons able to give me the best information, by
‘ the assistance of which I have traced the pro-
‘ gress of these affairs with astonishment: and
‘ therefore, as *England* has thus at length shewn
‘ a superiority in council, the usual resource of
‘ patching up a good peace at the end of an
‘ unsuccessful war, seems also to be precluded
‘ from them.

‘ As for the house of *Austria*, it has ever been
‘ a dead weight upon its friends, though its infa-
‘ tuated ingratitude to *England*, which had been
‘ in a manner its sole support, for near a century,
‘ will, probably, prevent any other state from
‘ undertaking such a burthen, so that it must
‘ sink back, into its original obscurity and bar-
‘ barism.

‘ Thus you see, my friend, that depending
‘ upon *France* is leaning on a broken reed, and
‘ trusting to *Austria*, going for shelter under a
‘ falling wall: what then can you do if the

122 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

‘ *English* should take offence at your behaviour,
 ‘ and exert that power which is in their hands,
 ‘ to punish your avaritious partiality to their ene-
 ‘ mies ?

‘ Your power is, in every instance, contemp-
 ‘ tible ; your navy is gone absolutely to decay ;
 ‘ your land forces are filled with old men and
 ‘ children ; your officers, who might have served
 ‘ you, have been obliged to enter into other ser-
 ‘ vices for bread, to make room for ignorant,
 ‘ indolent, pusillanimous burghers, who barter
 ‘ their votes for such a share of the spoils of the
 ‘ publick. Your finances are in the lowest state
 ‘ of embarrassment ; your publick spirit, your
 ‘ valour, your virtue, all swallowed up by sel-
 ‘ fishness, and sordid love of gain ; every thing
 ‘ in the situation, that seems to invite ruin, if it
 ‘ is not speedily prevented ; and that can pos-
 ‘ sibly be done no other way, than as I have
 ‘ mentioned ; for as I have said, and must again
 ‘ repeat, things are now on a footing there, that
 ‘ you do not seem to be properly aware of. The
 ‘ people are sensible of their own strength ; their
 ‘ governors exert it properly, and there is a mu-
 ‘ tual confidence between them, that in a man-
 ‘ ner ensures success to their attempts. Consider
 ‘ this fair, this friendly representation of real
 ‘ facts, and you will soon see the improbability
 ‘ of their bearing with you any longer ; or suf-
 ‘ fering you to defeat the ends of their military
 ‘ efforts, by carrying on the trade of their ene-
 ‘ mies, and so enabling them to continue the
 ‘ war.’

‘ *Is it come to this ? Are the friends on whom we*
 ‘ *depended most turned against us ? Are you an*
 ‘ *advocate for our enemies, and would persuade*

‘ us

‘ us to give up the most advantageous branch of trade we have?’

‘ Why will you let your passion blind you thus? I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that of all christians I hate the *English* most, because they resemble us least; as I love the *Dutch* most, as you come nearest to ourselves, both in practice and profession. But my passions never blind me! and therefore I speak the dictates of reason; I plead not for them, nor will I flatter you.’

‘ Notwithstanding all their boasted power, we have one stroke left to humble them; and we will make it directly; we will draw all our money out of their funds.’

‘ Will you so? at a third part loss? O, *Moses*! what fools are those christians? Do you not see that even this stroke, as you call it, is guarded against? that apprehensive of such an attempt, they have lowered the particular funds, in which your money chiefly lies, so far, that the loss of selling out now would be intolerable. And whose is this money which you would draw out? the property of private people: absurd thought! if it was the money of the publick, it would not be strange to see it sacrificed to private interest, but there is no instance in all your story of private property being given up voluntarily for the redress of publick wrongs.

‘ Friend *Hogan*, I am in haste; my affairs call me elsewhere; when I shall see you again is uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to miss this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in

' London; nor would I have another amuse you, with hopes that must deceive you in the end: while it was in my power to serve you I did; I abused their confidence; I betrayed their secrets to you: but I can do it no longer; nor can any other to effect. Measures, as well as men, are changed.——Adieu.'

With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend *Van Hogen* in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.



C H A P. XVIII.

AMINADAB bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for AFRICA. CHRYSAL remains with a DUTCH banker. The principles and conscience of a good DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL is sent into GERMANY. His opinion of the DUTCH.

THE young *Israélite* met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* blessed the God of his fathers, and to compleat the fulness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not *jewels of gold and jewels of silver*, as much coined gold and silver as he could, and then going with his son to the sea-side, they embarked for their native

native country, in all the exultation of successful villainy.

But I went not with them; my *British* shape being of more value in *Europe* than where he was going, my master left *me* with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there. — My *Hebrew* master had scarce left the banker, into whose hands he had given me, when in came his *Belgick* friend *Van Hogen*, all aghast at the news he had received from him, and something else, which had come to his knowledge since.

‘ O, *Mynbeer*! (said he) we are all blown up
‘ and undone! the flood is pouring in upon us.’
— ‘ What is the matter now, *Mynbeer*, (replied
‘ the banker) that throws you into this strange
‘ consternation? the worms have not destroyed
‘ the dams? nor an earthquake swallowed up the
‘ Spice-Islands?’

‘ *Worse, worse if possible, than even these!*
‘ *Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient ENGLISH*
‘ *have refused to release our ships that were taken*
‘ *carrying ammunition and provisions to their ene-*
‘ *mies, so that we are like not only to lose these ships,*
‘ *but also the advantage of the trade for the future.*
‘ *What can be done, to divert this blow?*’ — ‘ Really,
‘ *Mynbeer*, I cannot tell; the case is bad enough
‘ to be sure; but it is no more than was to be
‘ expected; it was not to be thought that they
‘ should always remain such passive fools, as
‘ tamely to look on, while we supplied their ene-
‘ mies with necessaries to carry on the war
‘ against them, without endeavouring to put a
‘ stop to us.’

‘ Death ! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus ! but say what you will, my PROVINCE shall never bear it ! Why, I have received advice this minute, that all our ships which were freighted for their enemies will be condemned ; and that they are as little moved at our menaces, as they were at our intreaties. If this continues, we shall not have a ship left in the TEXEL.’

‘ Nay, mine shall escape, I am resolved.’—

—‘ What will you do to save them?’——

‘ Not run them into the danger, *Mynheer*.’—

‘ How, give up the trade?’—‘ Most certainly ;

‘ since it cannot be carried on with safety any

‘ longer ; and glad that I have come off so well.’

—‘ I do not understand you !’—‘ You are too

‘ warm, *Mynheer* ; too sanguine in the pursuit

‘ of your projects ; while the surprize or fright

‘ of the late managers in *England*, gave me rea-

‘ son to think, that they would not venture to

‘ interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade, in

‘ this way, as any other : but, as soon as I saw

‘ the people recover their senses, and the reins

‘ put into other hands, I made a timely retreat

‘ with what I had acquired.’—‘ And what do

‘ you intend to do now?’—‘ Keep fair with those

‘ whom I can get nothing by breaking with,

‘ and throw my business into another channel ;

‘ by which management I have already suc-

‘ ceeded so far, that I have got the *British* re-

‘ mittances to the parties engaged in the present

‘ war.’—‘ Why there may be something in this ;

‘ and if one scheme fails, I believe I will even fel-

‘ low your example.’—‘ And pray what is that,

‘ *Mynheer*?’—‘ No more than the old cry of

‘ piracy ; but this is so laid that it can hardly fail

‘ of success : we have bribed the captain of an Eng-

‘ lish

‘ *lish privateer to rifle a ship, that we prepare properly for the purpose, and then to come into the way of one of our men of war, which is to take him and bring him in, where he is to insult the government, and vindicate his outrages on the pretence of authority.*’

‘ And pray, *Mynkeer*, what can you propose from all this, beside having the foolish villain hanged?’

‘ *Why the English, in detestation of such villainy, will give up the point of searching our ships, when they see their authority abused in such a manner, and so we shall gain our end that way; or if they do not, our own people will be so enraged at the insult and injustice (as they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will immediately declare war against them; and so we shall obtain it the other. The pirate, when he has served our turn, we are to let escape; and it will be no great loss to the world if half a score of his crew are hanged.*’

‘ A very just and publick-spirited scheme indeed! to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to commit, and engage your country in a war that must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to an unjustifiable trade.

‘ *Mynkeer Van Hogan*, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when my interest is not destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you, I think your present scheme is, in which I will be no farther concerned, than to try to prevent the evil consequences of it, to the state: the rest may lie upon your own head.

' Any thing in the way of trade, my conscience complies with without scruple; I can take every oath that every officer of the customs in *Europe* can impose, and not think myself bound by any of them, farther than they agree with my interest; I can supply the enemies of my country with arms, to fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes towards the support of the war; I can receive circumcision, stroke down my beard, and swear by *Mahomed*, to avoid a tax at *Smyrna*; I can trample upon the cross, deny *Christ*, and call myself a *Dutchman*, to obtain leave to trade in *Japan*; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home.

' I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the *German* princes, whom *England* keeps in pay, to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles, that it has long fought our battles, and would again, if we did not provoke it too far. And when this is done, I am to meet the *French* ambassador to settle terms with him, for remitting the money, that is to pay the army, which fights against the allies of *England*. So that you see I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool temper of our country, will let you open your eyes to your true interest.'

Mynheer Van Hogen departed, rather silenced than satisfied, with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negotiate the hire of a principality, with as much unconcern, as he would that of a turnip-field; and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference, as he would have bargained for a cask of herrings;

in which service, it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late master, I must own, there was something so grossly reprobate to every sense of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general; where the very profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it, being the absence of one vice, hypocrisy, which they rejected, as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grossest enormities, without reserve, or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the sovereign actors gave a dignity to the scenes; and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed, and lost, in the confusion of nations.



C H A P. XIX.

CHRYSAI'S remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions.

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory, in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went.

Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy Island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more deliberate devastations of regular invasion ; and the excellency of its laws, from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happiness, such is the insatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you possess, insensible, that your severest wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been said, that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man ; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self preservation, to flight the most terrifying dangers, and seek the most severe evils that interrupt its pursuit of an imaginary good.

The lust of power, and the intoxication of glory, may seem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature, but madness alone can support the mass of mankind through it, who are insensible to these fantastick motives, or at least cannot delude themselves with the faintest hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I saw many instances in my journey through the countries, that were the scene of the present war ; but one more particularly that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats, early in our journey, made the strongest impression on me, and deserves relation most. — There had been an obstinate battle fought some time before between the parties then at war, in which the
loss

loss was so severe, and so equal on both sides, that as soon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itself vanquished, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's situation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to assert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go, and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers, as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction, or respect to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity, having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcasses, carried like other worn-out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-side, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an *English* gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all seated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions

are thrown promiscuously together, when the conversation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the *Englishman* chanced to say, that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as, at that time, laboured to oppress the king of *Bulgaria*, was, to divest it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politicks to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious, and even base abuse of power, that could be instanced in the christian history; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his subjects to his cause, that is, really to their own cause, would rise superior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the stroke which they had perfidiously aimed at his ruin, to their dishonour and confusion.

The rage into which this reflection, so injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the passengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was so great that he could not suppress it, till the gentleman should conclude; but interrupting him, without the least respect to his personal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned, to have been admitted into the boat on his charity, ‘What do you mean, sir, (said he) by saying that this war will end in the dishonour of the king of *France*? Was not his motive for entering into it the most disinterested and glorious? to support the rights of sovereignty, and bring vassals to a proper sense of duty and obedience? And has not the success been answerable to the greatness of his designs?’

‘ designs? Have not his forces been every where
‘ victorious by land and sea?’

The tone of voice with which these words were spoken drew the eyes of all present upon the speaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and scarce seemed to have skin enough, not to say flesh, to cover the remainder of his shattered bones, and keep them together. But his spirit supplied all these disadvantages, and enabled him to raise himself upon his stumps, and cast a look of the most ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to destroy whoever dared to dispute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, ‘ How, (said he) the army of *France* ever
‘ victorious over *Bulgaria*! what assurance can
‘ dictate such a falsehood? Where have they ob-
‘ tained one victory? where have they escaped
‘ defeat, except when the superiority of their
‘ numbers have exceeded all proportion! and even
‘ then, their slain have generally equalled the
‘ whole amount of the forces, whom they fought
‘ with; what armies have they lost already! how
‘ few of those which remain will ever return to
‘ their native home, even in the wretched condi-
‘ tion that you do?’

These last words raised a general laugh at the person who spoke them, he being, if possible, in a more maimed and helpless condition, than the one to whom they were addressed, having lost both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and submitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, ‘ I see, gentlemen, (said he) that you
‘ laugh at my mentioning the wretchedness of
‘ any other living creature with contempt, who
‘ am

134 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

‘ am such a sufferer myself ! but what absurdities
 ‘ will not passion hurry men into ? and how could
 ‘ human patience bear to hear this *Frenchman*
 ‘ boast of the victories of his monarch, whose
 ‘ forces I myself have assisted to rout, at every
 ‘ place where I have ever met them.’

‘ You rout the forces of my master ! (replied
 ‘ the other) my master’s forces would eat up all
 ‘ your master’s subjects, for a breakfast.’— ‘ I
 ‘ do not deny their number nor their appetites,
 ‘ (returned the *Bulgarian*) they leave sufficient
 ‘ evidence of both wherever they go : cruelty
 ‘ and rapine lead forth their armies ; famine and
 ‘ desolation mark their marches. Shake not your
 ‘ head at me, nor lift your hand, as you regard
 ‘ your life ; else, loath as I am to make misery
 ‘ ridiculous by a quarrel between two such wretches
 ‘ as we are, though I have not an hand to strike,
 ‘ with my foot will I spurn out your life, and
 ‘ trample on your carcass.’

‘ *Morblieu ! compare the mighty MONARQUE*
 ‘ *of FRANCE with a little GERMAN king.*’

‘ You mistake me greatly ; I never meant to
 ‘ compare them : the greatness of your monarch
 ‘ I do not deny, were it not abused to purposes
 ‘ that make it a dishonour to *him*, and a misfor-
 ‘ tune to his subjects ; whereas our sovereign is
 ‘ the father of his people, and never exerts his
 ‘ power, but to their advantage.

‘ Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth ;
 ‘ any thing against myself I can despise ; but my
 ‘ king, my father, I can not, I will not hear
 ‘ spoken of with disrespect, while I have even a
 ‘ voice left to assert his cause : I have fought for
 ‘ him ; I have fought with him : for *he* does not
 ‘ sit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while
 ‘ his subjects are encountering hardships and
 ‘ dangers

‘ dangers to gratify his vanity or revenge. His
‘ quarrels are the quarrels of his people; and he
‘ fights their battles with them; and the only
‘ regret I feel for the loss of my limbs is, that I
‘ can employ them no longer in his service, for
‘ which I would lay down my life this minute
‘ with joy, could it gain him the least advantage,
‘ or was it necessary to prove my attachment to
‘ him.

‘ But since I can no longer have the happiness
‘ of being of service to him, all I have now to
‘ do is, to retire to my native country, where
‘ his paternal care has made such a provision for
‘ my wants, that I shall wear out my days in
‘ content, without ever having my prayers for his
‘ welfare, and success, disturbed by one repining
‘ wish, one just complaint.’

‘ But ask this vain-glorious knight errant if he
‘ can say so? Did he fight for the preservation of
‘ his family, his country, and his religion, as I
‘ did? Did he fight under the conduct of his so-
‘ vereign, who personally provided for the neces-
‘ sities, the comfort of his men, as I did? Is he
‘ sure of a peaceful retreat at home, safe from the
‘ additional distress of want, as I am?

‘ Not at all; he fought for he knew not what,
‘ he knew not whom. At a distance from his
‘ king, who was insensible of his dangers, and
‘ revelled in delicacies, while his subjects, the
‘ victims of his ambition, were destitute of the
‘ common, indispensable necessities of nature;
‘ nor has he any other hope of prolonging his
‘ miserable days when he gets home, but the
‘ wretch’s last resource of begging, in a country
‘ so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master,
‘ that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for
‘ want of means for its exertion.’ — All present
were

were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply; but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying, with a sneer, ‘ that since his feet were
 ‘ so good, he might hereafter use them instead of
 ‘ hands, for he would feed him no longer.’

This poor-spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied, with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the *Englishman* received it in another manner, for drawing out his purse, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himself into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*;
 ‘ Accept of these, my brother soldier, (said he)
 ‘ to make your journey into your native country
 ‘ more convenient, where you cannot meet
 ‘ more tender regard from your sovereign and
 ‘ country, than your sensible attachment to them
 ‘ merits. As far as I shall go your way I will
 ‘ take care of you myself, and that will defray
 ‘ the expence of the rest of your journey with
 ‘ comfort.’



C H A P. XX.

*The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL
 is carried to his destined master.*

THE *Bulgarian* was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor,

benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance.

As soon as he recovered utterance, ‘ Such
‘ (said he) is the noble benevolence that distin-
‘ guishes the sons of liberty! such the genero-
‘ sity of heart, that always extends the ready
‘ hand of a *Brituin*, with relief to the distressed.
‘ May heaven preserve to your happy nation the
‘ blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to
‘ make them a blessing to all who want their as-
‘ sistance. And though envy may malign, and
‘ ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence
‘ finds its reward in its own exertion, in the cer-
‘ tainty of a retribution from those treasures which
‘ never fail.’

The turn of this soldier’s discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him, ‘ if he had been bred
‘ to arms, or how long he had professed the mili-
‘ tary life, and in what station.’

‘ O, sir, (replied he with a sigh, that seemed to
‘ tear his heart) your question recalls to my me-
‘ mory, scenes that I would willingly forget for
‘ ever, and obliges me to relate such things as
‘ would draw tears from *Tartars*, *Pandours*, or
‘ the crueller soldiers of the king of *France*.——
‘ I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed
‘ the military profession long, or in any other
‘ rank than that which rage and despair first placed
‘ me in, when I offered myself to my sovereign to
‘ repel the invaders, and revenge the desolation of
‘ my bleeding country. My unhappy story is no
‘ more than this.

‘ I am

138 C H R Y S A L: Or, the

‘ I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the son of a minister of the gospel, who observing a desire of knowledge in my youth, encouraged and improved it, by his own precepts and example, and led my studious mind through the sublimest paths of science.

‘ As soon as he saw my resolutions sufficiently established to be proof against the levity of youth, and temptations of sense, he yielded to my entreaties, and I was admitted into the sacred order of which he was a member, and made the perfection of human wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue under the direction of the divine word, the business of my happy life. Happy indeed then! but now the recollection of that happiness aggravates my present misery, in the irrecoverable loss of it, almost to despair.

‘ As the religion of the benign redeemer of mankind does not enjoin impossibilities, by requiring us to eradicate passions, which are the essence of our nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation, and the basis of our being, and fulfills the first divine command, by continuing our species, and encreasing the number of his adorers, I obeyed the impulse of virtuous love, and married the daughter of a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I vainly thought, the sum of human happiness, by a numerous offspring, which grew up on the knees of their aged grandfire, my father; now become too feeble for the active duties, while my labours supplied the necessaries of life to my contented family, in which I thus stood the happy center of filial and paternal love.

‘ In

‘ In this blissful state did I advance toward
‘ heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of his
‘ virtues brought this destructive war upon the do-
‘ minions of our sovereign. O, my father! my
‘ children! my wife! in one day did I lose you
‘ all. These eyes beheld my habitation reduced
‘ to ashes, my children massacred in the wan-
‘ tonnes of cruelty, in despite of the prayers of
‘ my aged father, whose snow - white hairs,
‘ whose whole appearance would have struck
‘ the ruthless hearts of the ancient heathen *Gauls*
‘ with reverence, in despite of the cries of my
‘ beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their
‘ fury on themselves, from the defenceless inno-
‘ cents; but all in vain; the murderers, deaf
‘ to their cries and intreaties, insensible to the
‘ beauty of the babes, who stood smiling at the
‘ swords that hung over their heads, first butch-
‘ ered them as in sport, then abused the person
‘ of my wife to death, and mangled my father’s
‘ breathless body, whose tender heart, the grief
‘ of such a sight had burst, while I unhappier far
‘ than any, stood looking on bound to a tree,
‘ with my jaws distended with the head of a
‘ spear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear
‘ to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a
‘ *French priest* standing by, encouraging their
‘ cruelty, as meritorious against hereticks, and
‘ insultingly bidding me *preach now to my con-*
‘ *gregation*, at the same time refusing me the re-
‘ lease of death, which I besought by all the
‘ signs despair could suggest, and making them
‘ leave me naked, and whipped till my body
‘ was all one wound, to perish by famine and
‘ grief.

‘ But

‘ But heaven had ordained otherwise for me ;
 ‘ some of my neighbours who had escaped their
 ‘ fury, came, as soon as night favoured their
 ‘ fears, to learn our fate, and offer any assistance
 ‘ in their power. They unbound me; they
 ‘ buried the remains of my slaughtered family,
 ‘ and forced me from the grave, to their retreat
 ‘ in the woods, where they healed my wounds,
 ‘ and strove to comfort my distress. But all their
 ‘ arguments would have been too weak to make
 ‘ me suffer life, had not a desire of revenge taken
 ‘ possession of my soul, and silenced every other
 ‘ thought.

‘ As soon as I had recovered strength, I hastened
 ‘ to the army of my sovereign, where I threw
 ‘ myself at his feet, and told him all my distress.
 ‘ He heard me with pity; he shed tears at my
 ‘ sad story, and raising me with his own hand,
 ‘ *Be comforted, my brother, (said the mighty monarch to his meanest subject) be comforted, the*
 ‘ *losses of the just will be repaid in heaven; there*
 ‘ *thy happy family expect thine arrival; there thy*
 ‘ *virtues will be rewarded, thy joys compleat; when*
 ‘ *the evils of this world, which endure but for a*
 ‘ *moment, shall be at an end. The horrors of war*
 ‘ *agree not with the innocence of your past life, or*
 ‘ *the humane tenderness of your disposition, and would*
 ‘ *but aggravate your griefs, by the unhappily un-*
 ‘ *avoidable repetition of like scenes of ruin. Retire*
 ‘ *therefore to my capital, where all the comforts of*
 ‘ *life shall be provided for you, to alleviate your dis-*
 ‘ *treffs, while your prayers assist us in the day of*
 ‘ *battle.*’

‘ I heard his words with reverence, but his
 ‘ virtue was too sublime for my imitation. I
 ‘ fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands,

‘ O fir, (said I) this goodness is too great for
‘ man; alas, I am unable to obey its dictates;
‘ my soul languishes for vengeance: O, bear
‘ with human infirmity, and permit me to fight
‘ under thy command. Heaven heard not my
‘ prayers, or it would have prevented my ruin;
‘ let me then have recourse to other methods for
‘ redress; let me contribute my poor help to thy
‘ victories, to the deliverance of my country;
‘ I die this moment if my prayer is refused.

‘ *Be then my companion in this just war; (said*
‘ *my sovereign, raising me again) and since thy*
‘ *sacred function must not be disgraced with any*
‘ *other rank, fight by my side, and lead me to suc-*
‘ *cess.*’

‘ From that day have I followed his steps in
‘ the field of battle, at an awful distance; and
‘ been witness to all the wonders of his conduct
‘ and valour; till in the late action a cannon
‘ shot took off both my arms, as I had the ho-
‘ nour of holding my own horse for him to
‘ mount, his having been killed under him as I
‘ fought by his side.

‘ He expressed concern at my misfortune, and
‘ commanded me to retire to his own tent; but
‘ an *Austrian* hussar, the moment after, cut me
‘ down with his sabre, though in the unpreme-
‘ ditated instinct of self-preservation I had held
‘ up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow.

‘ Here I lay among my fellow sharers in the
‘ common calamity, in submissive expectation of
‘ the stroke of fate, from the horses feet, or the
‘ pillagers of the field. But heaven had other-
‘ wise ordained; and after two days weltering
‘ in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by
‘ charity, to the condition in which you see me,

‘ and

‘ and am now striving to go, and avail myself of
 ‘ my master’s humane offer, which your benevo-
 ‘ lence enables me to do with comfort.

‘ This fellow-sufferer, whose arrogance first
 ‘ prompted me to speak, has been a sharer with
 ‘ me also, in the charity which relieved us ;
 ‘ where our common calamity created a kind of
 ‘ friendship between us, and our necessities sug-
 ‘ gested it to us, to combine the remains of our
 ‘ limbs, for mutual assistance, he preparing our
 ‘ victuals, and feeding me, while I have carried,
 ‘ not only our poor baggage, but him also, upon
 ‘ my back.

‘ But that alliance is at an end ; not because
 ‘ the relief which you so generously have bestow-
 ‘ ed upon me, may seem to free me from the
 ‘ necessity of his assistance, for I must beg your
 ‘ leave to divide it with him, as half is sufficient
 ‘ for me, but that my soul abhors the principles
 ‘ which first led him into this distress, and which
 ‘ even such sufferings cannot shew the impious
 ‘ absurdity of ; and disclaims connection with
 ‘ the enemy of my gracious sovereign, who
 ‘ would thus malign his glory, when he cannot
 ‘ deny, nor longer resist the virtues, that have
 ‘ raised it.’

By this time we arrived at the place, where I
 was to be delivered to the minister of my destined
 master, who immediately carried me to him.



C H A P. XXI.

How CHRYSAL found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation, and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank.

WE found him busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who presenting the bag in which *we* were, with a bent knee, “The subsidy, may it please your ‘most serene highness, from *England*,” (said he.) — ‘*It is well,* (replied the sovereign) *but upon what terms?*’ — ‘The same your highness had last year.’ — ‘*No more! they shall not have my men! I can have more elsewhere! FRANCE offers better.*’ — ‘Then I must return this money, please your highness.’ — ‘*Return it? no; for what?*’ — ‘If your highness does not like the terms, you will not keep the money, I presume.’ — ‘*Fool, but I will! such laws may bind you subject wretches; but sovereign princes*

‘ are above them; laws are not made for us.’ —
 ‘ I humbly implore your highness’s pardon for
 ‘ my ignorance; then you will give those troops
 ‘ to FRANCE.’ — ‘ Yes, when FRANCE pays me
 ‘ for them.’ — ‘ But in the mean time, as ENG-
 ‘ LAND has already paid your highness, they
 ‘ will depend upon them, and consequently suffer
 ‘ by the disappointment.’ — ‘ Then let them prize
 ‘ my friendship properly another time; I am not
 ‘ obliged to support kings upon their thrones for no-
 ‘ thing; I may invade as well as guard against in-
 ‘ vasion. They shall know whom they dare of-
 ‘ fend.’

‘ Something has provoked your highness’s
 ‘ wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance should
 ‘ aggravate.’

‘ I will teach the respect that’s due to sovereignty;
 ‘ I am not king of England, curled in my will, and
 ‘ limited in power; my subjects are my slaves; they
 ‘ dare not think of any other law, besides my plea-
 ‘ sure. Death! can you think it! my minister at
 ‘ the court of ENGLAND writes me word, that a
 ‘ base, plebeian merchant has had the assurance to
 ‘ demand payment for the goods he sent me last year,
 ‘ for the support and splendor of my court, and on
 ‘ its not being deducted from the subsidy, to refuse
 ‘ supplying me this year, and even to threaten com-
 ‘ plaining to their parliament.

‘ Now judge you if a sovereign prince, whose forces
 ‘ are their security in time of danger, can brook
 ‘ such insolence: and to conclude the whole; What
 ‘ did the ENGLISH minister say, when my minister
 ‘ remonstrated with him upon this affair, but that
 ‘ by the laws of ENGLAND no man could be com-
 ‘ pelled to part with his property against his will,
 ‘ or hindered to complain, if he thought himself ag-
 ‘ grieved:

‘grieved: and that the laws were sacred, and must not be infringed. Think now if I can with honour keep an alliance with such people, till I have received satisfaction: I, whose subjects have no property nor laws, but my will, to be treated in such a manner, by a vile trader: it is not to be borne.’

‘I am very sorry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time, because if your highness should break with the *English* now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service.’

‘Why there may be something in that, and therefore, if they will send me the merchandize I want, and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not refuse them the succours they desire.’

‘How much does your highness require to have the subsidy raised?’

‘I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do, but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves without wearing out their uniform, or any other expence to me?’ — ‘That is very true; if your highness was not to consider at the same time, that even then they paid you as much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more than any other nation will, or can pay you now; for as to the promises of *France*, they are not to be depended on at all, whereas *England* always pays well.’

‘ I do not care ! what I have gotten here I will
 ‘ keep, by way of reprisal, for the insult offered to
 ‘ my honour ; and if they will have my troops, they
 ‘ shall pay me over again for them : so say no more
 ‘ on that head.’

‘ I submit ; but how will your highness subsist
 ‘ them at home in the mean time. There must
 ‘ be an immediate remittance made of some of
 ‘ this money to *Holland*, to buy provisions, for
 ‘ your magazines are quite exhausted, and the
 ‘ constant demand for men, to supply the troops
 ‘ you have agreed for, and recruit the losses they
 ‘ have sustained in battle, have not left sufficient
 ‘ to cultivate the land.’

‘ Then let them starve ! I shall not expend a
 ‘ penny to support them : Could not the women and
 ‘ children work ? I wonder you should dare to
 ‘ mention such a thing. If I lay out this money, what
 ‘ is to support the splendor of my court, since this
 ‘ ENGLISHMAN has refused to supply me ?’

‘ I humbly beg your highness’s pardon, but
 ‘ what answer am I to send to the *English*, who
 ‘ have demanded that the troops should march di-
 ‘ rectly ?’

‘ Why, that I am so enraged at the insult of-
 ‘ fered to me, by that merchant, that I will not let
 ‘ a man of them stir till I have satisfaction, and a new
 ‘ subsidy ; and that I keep this one in the mean time,
 ‘ to make up the deficiencies in former years.’

‘ Deficiencies ? I do not understand your high-
 ‘ ness ; the subsidies have been always regularly
 ‘ paid.’

‘ Obey my commands ! I say there have been de-
 ‘ ficiencies which I am not at leisure to explain in
 ‘ this emergency, but I suppose my word will be taken
 ‘ for it.’

‘ I fear your highness does not attend to the
‘ change which has lately been in *England*. The
‘ people who might have taken such an answer
‘ are now out of power; and their successors are
‘ the very men who have always been against
‘ dealing with your highness, and may now take
‘ the advantage of this breach of faith, for such
‘ I well know they will call it, to throw off your
‘ alliance for ever: for the people begin to see
‘ their own strength, and their governors to
‘ exert it properly, and shew them that they
‘ want no foreign assistance. And as a proof of
‘ this, at this very time, when their enemies not
‘ only talk of invading them more confidently
‘ than ever, but also have gone so far as to make
‘ preparations for such an attempt, so far from
‘ being dissident of their own strength, or in-
‘ timidated to call for help, they have actually
‘ sent a powerful body of their troops abroad,
‘ and are carrying on the war with vigour and
‘ success in every quarter of the world, satisfied
‘ that the inhabitants, who remain at home, are
‘ able to defend their country, and repel every
‘ attempt that may be made against it. And
‘ this change in their measures should give a
‘ caution how the persons who effected it are
‘ provoked.’

‘ *I care not; I will make the experiment; but*
‘ *do you draw up your dispatches in such a manner,*
‘ *that we may have it in our power to explain them*
‘ *to whatever sense shall suit us best. In the mean*
‘ *time we must keep up our appearance of treating*
‘ *with FRANCE, to give a weight to our de-*
‘ *signs.*’

The minister was prevented from replying by
the entrance of the muster master, who had been

just making a survey, and taking an account of every man, *able to bear arms*, in his highness's territories.

' Well, (said his highness) how do your musters answer? shall I be able to enlarge the number of my troops this year?' — ' May it please your most serene highness, (replied the officer) here is the return, in which I have taken down every man from twelve to seventy, according to your commands.' — *And how do they answer? better than last year I hope: there must a great many boys have grown up since.* — ' The list indeed looks almost as full as usual; but the late battles have so drained us of men to fill up the troops, that there are scarce any but boys left at home, and those have been so badly fed of late, that their size does not answer their years, and they look wretchedly beside. So that upon the whole I fear your highness will find it very difficult to compleat the forces already established, much more to raise any new.'

' *I must, I will, raise them! Tell me not of difficulties! what I command shall be performed! If there are not men, the women shall put on the men's cloaths and go; I will not be shortened of my revenue: they shall fight themselves, since they have not bred soldiers for me.*

' This, please your highness, is a list of the disabled men, who are not able to support themselves by any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the wars.'

' *Disabled men? I thought I ordered you not to exchange them; they might have remained in the hands of the enemy; such of them I mean as are not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate*
the

‘ the lands; or, such as were not prisoners might
‘ have been let perish of their wounds; it would
‘ have been a mercy to them to shorten their mi-
‘ sery.’

‘ May it please your highness, I observed your
‘ orders, and left a number of such wretches,
‘ unexchanged; but the enemy saw into my de-
‘ sign, and sent them home to be rid of the
‘ trouble of them: and now they are crying
‘ for subsistence, and demand the arrears of their
‘ pay, which was stopped while they were pri-
‘ soners. The others our surgeons took proper
‘ care of.’

‘ Insolent slaves! demand pay, when they are
‘ no longer able to earn it! And subsistence too!
‘ they learned this impudence from their conversation
‘ with those English! it is much they did not de-
‘ mand roast beef and pudding too! — Hang up
‘ half of them, the next word of the kind they dare
‘ to utter, to terrify the other half to starve in quiet.
‘ And at your peril let me hear no more of them.

‘ As for the musters I will have them compleated;
‘ man, woman, and child shall go! I will make
‘ my dominions a desert, before I lessen my conse-
‘ quence among the sovereign powers of Europe.’



C H A P. XXII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.

HIS highness had just declared this unanimous resolution, when the steward of his household entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his table was supplied, had refused to send him any more provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more subsidies from *England*; and there was scarce enough to make out dinner, for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princesses of the various branches of his highness's most illustrious house having come to pay him a visit of congratulation upon the birth of the most serene prince his son and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's flesh and venison, nor even a sufficient quantity of these, the misery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his forests, to save themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure; but then bursting into a rage, ‘*Hunt in my forests!* (said he) *Audacious*
‘*slaves!*

‘ *slaves ! dearly shall they pay for their presumption ! Order my troops to march that way directly ! I’ll lay the country waste !* ’ — ‘ Please your highness (replied the steward) that will not cost you the trouble of marching your troops : the country is a desert already.’

‘ *Who told you that they have been guilty of this insolence ? you should have seized the author of the report, for not apprehending the criminals.*’

‘ May it please your highness, they took one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here, to receive the sentence of your pleasure ; and the stag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and had borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded hunger, and the cries of a starving family of grand-children, for he is an old man, and his three sons have been killed in the wars ; but, though I own he moved me, I did not presume to let him go.’

‘ *It is well you did not, or you should have suffered in his stead. Go, strip him naked, bind him on that stag, and then let him loose with him upon his back into the woods, proclaiming, that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief : he shall have hunting enough.*’

‘ But what will your highness have me do about provisions for the entertainment of the princes. I believe they design a long visit, for they have brought all the young princes and princesses of their illustrious families with them.’

‘ *I care not ! I am not to be disturbed on such trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my resolutions : let them go home again.*’

‘ Not fasting I presume; for they have already
 ‘ signified some of them, that they have come
 ‘ without their breakfasts, by calling for refresh-
 ‘ ment the moment they arrived; and indeed I
 ‘ fear the principal motive of this visit of their
 ‘ highnesses was want of any thing to eat at
 ‘ home.’

‘ *Confusion! what can I do? Here, take this
 ‘ money, and send for victuals for them.*’

The sight of an handful of guineas was an agreeable surprize to the steward, who had not heard of the arrival of the subsidy from *England*. He received them with evident pleasure, and I felt no less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty, of which I was sincerely sick; though by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domestick office of going to market for a morsel of bread, from the glory of causing the slaughter of thousands, to the virtue of supporting the lives of a few.

The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the presence of his highness, called the other officers of the household together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their master’s breaking with *England*, so that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad tidings, by shewing them the gold.

The pleasing sight raised universal joy; they licked their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds, and keen appetites; while the steward not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a mouldy crust with

with a draught of four wine, and then went to market for them himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state. Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negotiations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greatest dispatch, to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew, for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.



C H A P. XXIII.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.

I Now entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last; my present master denying himself the very necessities of life to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the most vain ostentation of splendor to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It is difficult to say which hypocrisy was most absurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice. The former basely stealing, as I may say, from the publick, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was soon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade, called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every species of deceit, that can impose upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to wear off
every

every hesitation of conscience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purse, to make a shew with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was too strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master, therefore, who was of the tribe of *Levi*, retired from business early, to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most secret and mysterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the sacrifice of the *Passover*, which, by a secret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood, for which purpose the most beautiful children were purchased at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of servants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe, to these ceremonies: it being a long-received opinion, that the original sacrifice of a lamb was designed only for that one occasion, to conciliate the favour of heaven, to the escape of their forefathers out of Egypt; but that to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the consummation of their promised happiness

and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But as some traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts divested of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of Christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life, whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews, with severity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the *Passover* were literally observed, in respect to the victim, who was to be *without blemish, a male of the first year*, that is, the first-born of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed*, during which time they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the highest perfection of his nature.

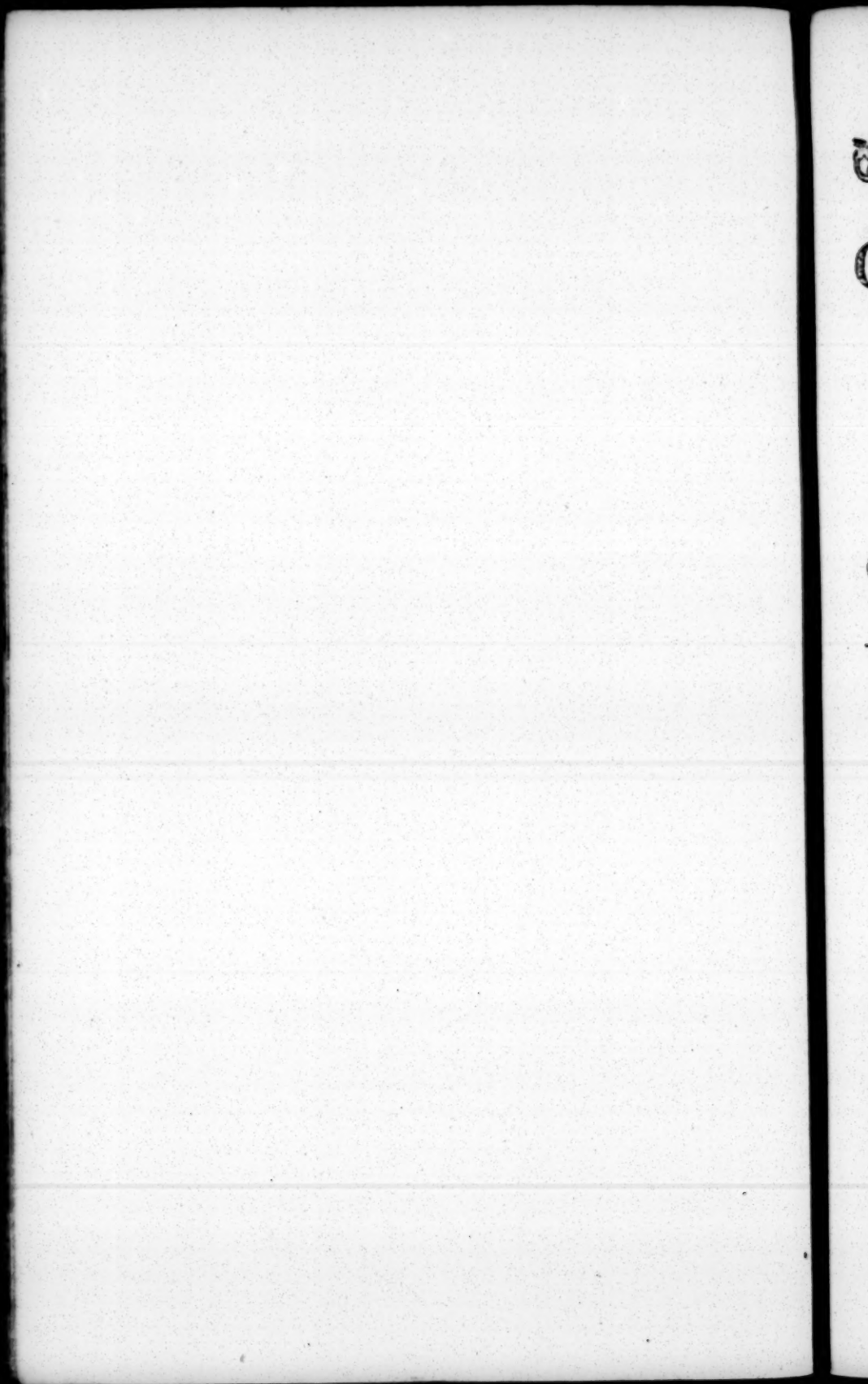
The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a summer-house in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and in a long speech declared the occasion of their meeting, read the original institution of the *Passover*, and then recited the tradition, which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before; concluding with an oath of secrecy, which all present joined in and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of this horrid mystery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved, by those who had provided them, who were reimbursed their expences before the sacrifices began, by the general contribution of all present.

This method was used, that every person might have an equal share in the merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

THE END of the FIRST BOOK.





CHRYSA L:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

G U I N E A.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

*The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed.
This cleared up without a miracle. The few
survivors of the first fury brought to publick
justice.*

I See your astonishment how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action against which his severest vengeance is denounced; yet such are the errors which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions

ventions substituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The *Devil*, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are ashamed of owning themselves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *Devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool, and nothing else could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human sacrifices, we need search for the original, no farther than in the heart of man, who observing, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its blessings to be made, in the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and measuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he arose from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of heaven, hindering him to see the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the instruments for slaying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the

the butchers, of whom my master was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry, that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in, and seized them, as they stood stupified with their fright.

The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather; for, as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, *O, father! father! come and untie my hands! these ugly cords hurt me!*

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, then starting in a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and snatching him up in his arms, ‘*O my child! (said he, in an extasy) have I found you! have I rescued you in the very moment when you were going to be sacrificed by these wretches. O my child! my child!*’

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was in a moment a scene of horror beyond description. Most of them fell instant sacrifices to this resistless rage. Happier far in having so speedy an end put to their sufferings than the few survivors, who saved their lives for that moment, by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the soldiers took all care not to hurt.

The

The little respite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the soldiers, who would not be persuaded to spare the rest, by any other argument, but a positive assurance of having them put to the most severe and infamous publick death.

When the storm was a little calmed by these means, and the living separated from the dead, the pillage of the scene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the most unrelenting severity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary justice on the miserable criminals, stripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their destined victims, who were unbound with the tenderest care, and carried away till their parents should be discovered, or in case that could not be, to be educated at the publick expence, as the children of the state, while their intended murderers were thrown into prison, till a punishment should be appointed severe enough for their guilt.

In the confusion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer, who had found his child, whose passions were raised so high by the recovery of him that as soon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to share his joy with his disconsolate wife.

The tenderness of this meeting was a just reverse of the former part of the last scene, where the helpless infants were led forth to be slaughtered.

As the Jews were some of the wealthiest of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magistrates, to prevent the imputation of injustice, and to set the whole
affair

affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the rescued infants were produced on one side, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new master, who bore a considerable office in the state, beside his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a short, but moving speech. He told them, ' that having lost his only child, the infant there ' present, about a month before, and having ' been informed when he served in *Poland*, in ' his youth, that the Jews had a custom of stealing and sacrificing, or murdering infants, on ' the night when they celebrated their *Passover*, ' he made no search for him, but seemed to believe a story which he had invented himself, to ' appease the distraction of his wife, that he had ' been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that ' was kept in the garden of his country house, ' from whence he was stolen, watching, in the ' mean time, every motion of the Jews with ' such exactness, that he had punctual information of their meeting at the place where he ' had seized them the evening before ; where it ' was to be lamented, that the just resentment ' of the soldiers had anticipated the severer ' hand of justice, and saved them from the laws, ' the judgment of which he now demanded ' against the remaining few, for himself and for ' the unknown parents of the innocent victims, ' whom they saw before them.'

A roar of universal indignation pursued his words, which had inflamed the rage and detestation of the people so high, that they were with difficulty restrained from tearing the wretches instantly in pieces, by the same arguments which had

had saved them from the soldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to say a word in their own defence, for though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controversy; and beside, many of the people, who had formerly lost their children, now charged them with their murder, with the strongest appearance of justice.

They were therefore dragged back to prison, where they lay loaded with chains, till the day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very spot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the house being rased to the ground for that purpose, and all the effects of such as were taken in this fact, confiscated to the use of the state.



C H A P. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented brings CHRYSAL into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the sight of CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was scarce ended, when I changed my master again. The city in which I was, had professed a neutrality in the present war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biased by private interest, the magistrates had, on many occasions, shewn the strongest partiality

partiality to the enemies of the king of *Bulgaria*.

Of this that heroic prince over-looked many instances in compassion to their folly; but instead of inspiring them with proper sentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded so far, as to refuse him those good offices, which, by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a resentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without deigning to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their safety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with submissions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As these contributions were too large to be immediately discharged by the state, they were obliged to be levied on the subjects, by which means I came into the service of this monarch, to whose treasurer I was paid, by the humbled magistrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wish for such an opportunity of seeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions to be. How my expectations were answered cannot be explained justly without a particular account of every thing I saw, while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow
short,

short, I shall only give you a few of the most remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the rest.

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finished the business of the morning, conversing with the most engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redressing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magistrates of the city I had just left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make submission for their misbehaviour; for to humble them the more effectually he had ordered that they should attend himself.

As soon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and delivering the money to his treasurer, implored his pardon, in the most abject terms of submission. ‘ Arise, (said the monarch) and cease your supplications; the posture and address are both improper to be offered to a man; but the passions of the foolish are ever in extremes; and your fear sinks you now as low, as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety; and let this teach you, not to mistake moderation for fear another time. But beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates to folly if extended to a second.’

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when turning to his treasurer, ‘ Take (said he) so much of that money as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country around their city, and see that it is given to the sufferers to be applied to that use, and none
‘ other,

‘ other, for I war not with the poor, nor would
‘ have my steps marked by desolation, when it
‘ can possibly be avoided. And of the remain-
‘ der leave the usual sum upon my table, for my
‘ private occasions.’

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general, ‘ How abject (said he) is the
‘ submission of the proud ! how does guilt hum-
‘ ble the conscious heart ! These unhappy men,
‘ who dared not now to meet our eyes, but hast-
‘ ed with down-cast looks from the flash of just
‘ indignation, when last we saw them, looked
‘ us in the face with the assurance of friendly re-
‘ spect, and seemed happy in the marks of our
‘ regard. Let this teach us to preserve the
‘ adamant shield of a clear conscience, and
‘ terror can never strike a dart through it, to
‘ our hearts.’

When the treasurer went to divide the money, among which *I* lay, according to his master’s orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I should be torn so soon from the presence of this prince ; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his master’s pages, to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince’s greatness, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his person. This made me surprized to find every thing in a plainness, far greater than what I had in many instances observed in private life. But I instantly perceived my error, and that his greatness was his own, established on the virtues of his soul, and independant of, and superior to every adventitious circumstance.

I had not lain long upon his table when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two across the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his soul in the most ardent devotion to heaven.

He then arose with a most serenely chearful countenance, and coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earnestly for a moment, ‘O thou source of every evil which
 ‘distracts this wretched world, (said he) let me
 ‘not be infected by thy poison; let not my
 ‘heart conceive a fondness for thee, farther than
 ‘what thy native value of enabling it to do
 ‘good, justly entitles thee to; I am yet free
 ‘from thine infatuation; nor have ever suffered
 ‘avarice to tempt me to desire thee, by
 ‘improper means, nor vain luxury, or pride,
 ‘to abuse thee by profusion. This pittance only
 ‘do I call my own, which I devote to the divine
 ‘author of all the benefits and mercies of my
 ‘life, ingrateful return, by supplying with it
 ‘the necessities of my distressed fellow creatures.’

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to observe *my* shape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, ‘Is
 ‘there no corner of the earth (said he) where
 ‘the wealth of Britain is not dispersed? If its
 ‘commerce collects the produce of every climate
 ‘under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse
 ‘its riches as far. Great and happy nation!
 ‘wer’t thou but sensible of the blessings of thy
 ‘condition; but the time is come, when thou
 ‘openest thine eyes to thine own interest, and
 ‘feelest the mightiness of thy strength. How
 ‘great is the power of true wisdom! how happy
 ‘the

‘ the people who have a good man for their
‘ guide.’

Saying this he put us into his pocket, and as soon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a disguise, that secured him from mis-information or deceit.



C H A P. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise.

The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory.

His conduct in and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp from the effects which I had seen of war, made me expect a scene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprized here, to find every thing as regular and tranquil as in the best governed city in the midst of peace.

My master had not walked far, when some conversation, that seemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he stopped to listen what might be the subject of it. ‘ I imagine (said a voice within) that we shall
‘ have a battle soon: the chearfulness of the
‘ king’s looks, and the more than common
‘ spirits he has been in for these few days, are
‘ certain signs that he has some great things in
‘ view. I always observe him so before a battle.’

‘ The sooner it comes the better, (replied another) I only wish, that our forces were not so

170 C H R Y S A L: *Or, the*

‘overmatched in numbers; not that I fear success when he is with us; but that we might be able to give them a total defeat at once, and so prevent their making head again. For such is the inequality at present, that while we are killing half of them the other half escape; and though what we destroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the runaways still remains to give us more trouble. But however we must only do our duty, and kill them all one after another.’

‘And so we will, brother, (continued the other) if it please God to preserve our king to us; for while we have him we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only encreases the glory of vanquishing them. Indeed I wonder how they can stand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war against their inclination, who have no interest in the event, no attachment to their leaders! But what attachment should they have to such leaders, who shew no regard to their distresses, nor make any provision for their wants, but just drive them to battle, like oxen to the slaughter, and when it is over, take no farther care about them, but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go.’

‘Well, brother (returned a third voice) thank God that is not our case; we follow a leader who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for all their occasions. We fight for ourselves, and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when he has disappointed
‘the

‘ the designs of his enemies, and restored peace
‘ to his people : but if we are to fight to-morrow
‘ we had better take our rest to night, to make
‘ us fresh and strong for the battle. God bless
‘ and preserve our king ; while his care watches
‘ over us we can sleep in safety in the midst of
‘ our enemies.’

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the king with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eye. ‘ O my God (said he, when the voices ceased) enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to an happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.’—He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp ; his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick, for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to them himself.

The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care, which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder ; no negligence or abuse among the attendants ; no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the patients : all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before !

If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his soldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to extasy, by the behaviour of these victims of the madness of the great. The thought

of having suffered in his cause, the extremest anguish of pain, nor even the agonies of death ever making them utter a syllable to his disadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preservation was always joined with their own relief, and his happiness recommended with their souls to heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne ; he joined in the general prayer, and hasted from the tender scene as soon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a strict view of every thing, in which his orders might be disobeyed ; and these his particular family, as he called them, suffer by neglect.

His tour was now finished, and he returned to his tent, to take his necessary rest, having distributed, on the various occasions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him, except *me*, who happened to stick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exercise, and serenity of conscience ensured his repose ; he fell asleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his usual early time of rising the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of such a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head, and undismayed heart, and soon reduced the confusion of them into such order, as made their execution easy.

As the soldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The king had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. ‘ I expected it, (said the king coolly) I knew they could not remain long in the situation they were in. But let us observe
‘ their

‘ their motions, that we may regulate ours by them.’

Then ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house, from whence he could view them distinctly, where having observed them attentively for some considerable time, ‘ It is done, my friends !’ (said he, with a smile of joy that enlightened all his face) ‘ it is done ! that last motion is what we wanted. Let us haste and embrace the opportunity which heaven has put into our hands.’ — Then descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory ; the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall therefore only say, that my master was compleatly victorious ; and to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person ; the excellent disposition he had made of the rest, rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action, from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without resistance : the field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge : but numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour ; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of

his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning. — If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over ; when cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.



C H A P. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.

THE transactions succeeding this event, were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that to a being free from the contradictory phrensies of mankind, the very thought is painful. — His majesty's next care, after returning publick thanks to heaven, on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of his soldiers: he praised ! he promoted ! he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous

teous in the reward of merit, than severe in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withstand his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour; who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a siege, their success in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a ballance to the horrors of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of *glory*, when an unexpected occasion shewed me his character in a light, that raised my admiration of him still higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private soldier, threw himself prostrate across his way, crying, ‘*Mercy! O great king! have mercy on the sufferings of a wretch in despair, and shew yourself the substitute of heaven by impartial justice.*’—The guards and attendants on the king would have spurned the suppliant out of the way, but his majesty, struck with the strangeness of the address, and imagining it must proceed from some extraordinary cause, interposed, and bidding him arise, ‘What is the grievance you complain of?’ (said he, with a placid look and

encouraging accent) ‘ or against whom do you so
‘ solemnly implore justice ?’

‘ O, great and good king’ (replied the stranger, with an air that bespoke something above his present appearance) ‘ my griefs are too many to
‘ be told so concisely as your present situation
‘ demands, and the justice I implore will require
‘ time to divest nature of its strongest passions.’—
‘ What can this mean!’ (said the monarch in surprise;) ‘ meet me directly at my tent, and expect that justice which the simplicity of truth
‘ shall be entitled to, without these laboured exclamations.’— The business which his mind was intent upon, prevented the king’s thinking any more of this affair, till he saw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him,
‘ Now (said he) speak your griefs with the boldness, but also with the guard of truth, and
‘ doubt not the redress of justice.’— Encouraged by these words, the stranger bowing his head, and pausing a moment, as if to support his grief, began thus: ‘ So may the ear of heaven be ever
‘ open to thy petitions, O gracious king, as thou
‘ hast readily vouchsafed to hear my cries! so
‘ may its justice redress thy wrongs, as thou
‘ shalt deal with mine. Thou seest before thee
‘ the most wretched of mankind, whom despair
‘ has reduced to the necessity of flying from the
‘ defence of his country, and imploring justice
‘ for his private wrongs, from the declared foe
‘ of my sovereign. But let me not waste your
‘ time with fruitless complaints. My name,
‘ though spoken with some respect in my native
‘ country, is too obscure to have reached your
‘ ears, as my ancestors wisely confined their virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to em-
‘ blazon

‘ blazon their names with titles, that too often
‘ marr the happiness of their owners.

‘ In their steps I trod, till the wrath of heaven
‘ kindled the ambition of princes, and my coun-
‘ try became the theatre of their contention. I
‘ then thought it my duty to arise in its defence,
‘ and the justice of my motive drew success on
‘ my attempts. But while I vainly indulged the
‘ hope of being instrumental in delivering my
‘ country from the horrors of war, a foe broke
‘ into my house, thus destitute of its defender,
‘ and rifled all the treasure of my soul. O, my
‘ unhappy wife! my newly wedded, beautiful
‘ wife! in vain didst thou call upon me in the
‘ hour of thy distress! when the hand of the ra-
‘ visher was twisted in thine hair, and the hor-
‘ rors of immediate ruin took possession of thy
‘ soul! Thy protector was away, busied in the
‘ defence of others, while the wolf was ravaging
‘ his deserted fold.

‘ But whither does my distraction hurry me?
‘ O pardon, gracious monarch, the inconsis-
‘ tencies of despair! I will be brief; I will not
‘ trespass on thy precious time.’—— He paused
then a moment, till a flood of tears eased the
fulness of his heart, and then proceeded thus.

‘ In the irruption of thy troops into *Bohemia*,
‘ about six months ago, my unhappy fortune
‘ led a party of them to my house, where the
‘ industry of my ancestors, for ages of peace,
‘ fell a sacrifice to the wantonness of unrestrained
‘ devastation in one moment. But I complain
‘ not of this. It was my share of the indis-
‘ criminate calamity. Alas! my woes are of
‘ another nature.

‘ The beauty of my wife struck the very hard-
 ‘ ened hearts of the soldiers with such reverence,
 ‘ that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared
 ‘ not to lay a sacrilegious hand on her: but this
 ‘ safeguard that protected her from rapine,
 ‘ only raised the more audacious rage of lust
 ‘ against her. The officer who commanded the
 ‘ party no sooner saw her, than inflamed with
 ‘ brutal desire, he hurried her away with him to
 ‘ the camp, where imagination shrinks in hor-
 ‘ ror, from the thought of what she may have
 ‘ suffered.

‘ The news of my misfortune soon reached
 ‘ me: no restraints of military duty were of
 ‘ force to hold me a moment; I flew to the scene
 ‘ of my ruin, where, having learned what I
 ‘ have related to you, the greatness of my grief
 ‘ stupified me for a time, till the thought of my
 ‘ wife’s being still alive, and in the possession of
 ‘ her ravisher, roused me to a resolution of la-
 ‘ bouring for her relief. I, therefore, immedi-
 ‘ ately entered in disguise into those very troops
 ‘ which had perpetrated my ruin, as I despaired
 ‘ of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any
 ‘ other means. My stratagem had success; I
 ‘ soon learned that the officer, who had brought
 ‘ my wife from my house, had been obliged to
 ‘ give her up to his general, who had demanded
 ‘ her as soon as she had been brought to the
 ‘ camp.

‘ A dawn of hope broke in upon me; though
 ‘ I could not gain any account of her after this,
 ‘ I thought that a man, honoured with your par-
 ‘ ticular esteem, must be possessed of virtue, and
 ‘ this I knew must be her protection.

‘ Big with this hope I found means to rejoin
‘ my own corps, where my absence was easily
‘ excused to a general who was my friend, and
‘ who readily yielded to my request of sending
‘ a trumpet, with a letter to enquire for such a
‘ lady, and to desire that she might be treated
‘ with the tenderness and respect due to her sex,
‘ and beauty, till she should be restored to her
‘ friends.

‘ But all my fond hopes fell to the ground,
‘ when an answer was returned, that the general
‘ knew not of such a person. Despair now
‘ stared me in the face; I saw all the horrors of
‘ my condition; and would that instant have
‘ returned in my disguise and stabbed the ravisher
‘ at the head of his forces, had I not reflected
‘ that my *Theodora* might be only exposed by
‘ such an action, to new insults, and her life
‘ perhaps sacrificed in torture and ignominy to
‘ revenge.

‘ While I fluctuated in this distress, heaven in-
‘ spired me with the thought of having recourse
‘ to your justice. Though he is the enemy of
‘ my sovereign, said I, he is *a man* who feels the
‘ tender impulse of humanity; he is a *king*, who
‘ delights in justice! I therefore reassumed my
‘ disguise and entered into your camp as a de-
‘ ferter, the night before this battle, in which
‘ instinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me
‘ to the duty of a soldier, and I happened to fight
‘ near your person; where, though I was sen-
‘ sible of my crime, in assisting the enemy of my
‘ sovereign, I had this palliative consolation, that
‘ the forces I engaged were not my fellow-sub-
‘ jects, but those of a perfidious ally, who en-
‘ tered into the war only to take his own ad-

‘ vantage, when a proper opportunity should
‘ offer.

‘ This, O gracious king, is my unhappy
‘ story; this is the grievance for which I im-
‘ plore thy justice; for which I fought against
‘ the allies of my sovereign yesterday; for which
‘ I threw myself before your horse’s feet this
‘ morning; for which I now call upon you by
‘ that power who has placed you as his substi-
‘ tute on earth, and will require an account of
‘ thy stewardship. O justice! justice! jus-
‘ tice!’



C H A P. V.

*The king sends for the general, and orders the
stranger to be confined, till his arrival. Con-
tinuation of the story of the stranger. A new
trial of the king’s fortitude and activity of
soul.*

THE king heard out the stranger’s story
without interruption, and then addressing
himself to his officers and attendants round him,
‘ How unhappy (said he) is the condition of
‘ princes, who must be answerable for the crimes
‘ of their servants, as if every man’s own were
‘ not more than he can bear.

‘ I thought this man as upright as I knew him
‘ brave; I thought justice and mercy attemper-
‘ ed valour in his breast. But perhaps he is
‘ wronged; let us not judge too hastily: go,
‘ (turning to one of his officers) bid him come

‘ to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occasion; if he is guilty he has forfeited my esteem for ever; but if this complaint is only a calumny devised to exasperate me against one of my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice which he so solemnly implores. Let him therefore be taken into custody ‘till the event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity which his apparent distress stands in need of; nor let any hardship or indignity give justice the appearance of prejudice, or seem to intimidate his resolution.’

He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His majesty’s command were so punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his master, who received him with his usual familiarity, and having conferred with him for some time, on the situation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse: ‘ It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive command, that the calamities of this necessary war should fall as light as possible on the innocent subjects of those powers who have provoked it: particularly I have always enjoined the strictest care, to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty, or ill treatment to the defenceless weakness of the aged, of women, and children. What then must be my grief to find these orders

‘ ders disobeyed? to find that the ruins of the
 ‘ poor mark the marches of my armies, and the
 ‘ cries of private anguish arise to heaven against
 ‘ me? But these enormities shall not lie on my
 ‘ head, for neglect of punishing them; nor be
 ‘ persisted in on the hope of impunity. Were
 ‘ my right hand guilty of such crimes I would cut
 ‘ it off with my left, rather than it should infect
 ‘ my mind.’

The solemnity with which the king spoke these words, struck all present with terror for *the accused*, who alone was ignorant of their design. The king saw the general concern, and to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded; then turning short upon the general with a determined look, and awful voice, ‘ Tell me (said he) where
 ‘ is the woman, whom thou hadst from the officer who brought her to the camp, when the
 ‘ forces under thy command entered into *Bohemia*?
 ‘ the woman whom the *Bohemian* general sent to
 ‘ enquire after in vain; and whom I fear thou
 ‘ didst deny, and still detainest for purposes too
 ‘ base to mention?’

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind: he stood abashed, and the confusion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king saw his distress with the greatest concern, but superior to every private regard that could interfere with his sublimer character, ‘ Tell me where she is
 ‘ this instant! (said he) nor aggravate by falsehood, crimes already too flagrant; for I will
 ‘ know the whole of this black affair.’

‘ O, sir! (replied the general, throwing himself at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but
 ‘ I

‘ I cannot bear thy wrath ; let me die this moment ; let that punishment expiate my guilt ; but afflict me not longer with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I can bear.’ — ‘ *Where is the woman ? speak.*’ — ‘ Safe and inviolate in my tent. My intreaties have not been able to prevail on her virtue ; and my passion was too delicate to seek gratification by force.’ — ‘ *This moment let her be sent for ! and let the cause of her coming be concealed from her : I will learn the truth of this strange affair from herself. In the mean time let her husband be treated with tenderness and respect. His misfortunes deserve compassion.*’

The king had scarce said this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulsed with great loss, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.—‘ *Thy will be done, O God,*’ (said the king) *thy will be done.*’ — And then without any appearance of surprize or alteration in his looks, he instantly gave orders for a strong detachment of the army under his own command, to march to the reinforcement of that which had suffered this loss ; and retired to consider of the alterations which this event must necessarily occasion in the operations of the campaign, and write his several orders accordingly, for he was his own secretary.

But though his looks were thus easy, his heart severely felt this misfortune ; ‘ O God (said he as soon as he was alone) when will thy wrath be appeased ? When shall this people have rest ? If I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, but spare them ! There
‘ is

' is nothing certain in this life ; nothing worth
 ' a wise man's care or regard ; the victory with
 ' which it pleased thee to bless our arms so lately,
 ' raised my hopes to a prospect of peace. But
 ' the scene is now changed ; and this advantage
 ' will raise the pride and malice of our enemies
 ' still higher, and make new deluges of blood
 ' necessary to bring them to a sense of reason and
 ' justice. Thy will be done, O Lord ; but as
 ' it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make
 ' use of the means which thou hast put into our
 ' power, to accomplish that end, which appears
 ' to us most just and advantageous. The hor-
 ' rours of war are ready to burst upon my coun-
 ' try after all my endeavours to save it, and di-
 ' vert them elsewhere. But they shall not un-
 ' opposed ; I myself will stand in the breach,
 ' and defend my native country.'

The serenity in the looks of the king had de-
 ceived the fears of the army, and every one pre-
 pared to obey him with the greatest alacrity :
 and though this affair put the whole camp in mo-
 tion, it occasioned neither disorder nor confusion.
 Active as light, the king *was* every where, *or-*
dered every thing, *saw* every thing prepared, as
 well for the convenience of his soldiers as for the
 greatest possible expedition of their march. His
 armies might be vanquished, for they were but
 men ; but to deject or disorder *his* mind was not
 in the power of any event.



CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. CHRYSAL changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of BULGARIA, and the probable consequences of the war.

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The first sight of this woman raised emotions in his heart which it had long been a stranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a sweetness and expression in her looks beyond description, soon made him sensible that all his heroism could not eradicate the passions of nature, and raised his pity both for the unfortunate general and for her husband.

He stood some moments gazing at her in silent astonishment; but recollecting himself soon, he addressed her thus with the highest complacency and respect, in his look and accent, ‘ I have sent for you, madam, to this improper place for the delicacy of your sex, to learn from yourself the manner of your having been brought away from *Bohemia*, and the cause of your being since detained by the general of my army. Speak, madam, have you suffered any violence, any usage improper for your sex and merit ;

‘ merit ; speak with the assurance of truth, and
 ‘ expect justice and redress.’

‘ O mighty king, (said the lady, prostrating
 ‘ herself at his feet) oft have I heard of thy won-
 ‘ drous virtues ; but never ’till this moment
 ‘ could I think that you could stoop so low as to
 ‘ take notice of my wretchedness. My sad story
 ‘ is no more than this ; I was torn from my
 ‘ house by an officer of your army ; I was hur-
 ‘ ried away to the camp by him ; and there in-
 ‘ sulted by the base offers of his love ; but hea-
 ‘ ven delivered me from him. Your general
 ‘ heard of my distress and rescued me from his
 ‘ power : since which time I have had no per-
 ‘ sonal cause of complaint, beside the indiscrimi-
 ‘ nate calamity of the wars, which have robbed
 ‘ me of my husband, and left me a friendless wi-
 ‘ dow in the hands of mine enemies.’— A flood of
 tears here stopped her utterance.

The king raising her from the ground, proceed-
 ed thus : ‘ A widow, madam, did you say ; how
 ‘ long since have you lost your husband, and by
 ‘ what means did you hear of his death ?’

‘ O, sire ! (replied she) as soon as I was freed
 ‘ from the horrors of brutal violence by the
 ‘ general, I wrote to my husband with his per-
 ‘ mission, but received no answer to many, very
 ‘ many letters. This suspense was worse than
 ‘ death, and almost drove me to despair ; till
 ‘ the general at length, in compassion to my mi-
 ‘ sery, wrote himself to the commander of the
 ‘ army in which my husband had served, who
 ‘ returned him for answer, that he had been killed
 ‘ about the time I was taken prisoner. O ! hap-
 ‘ py had been my lot had I shared his fate !’

‘ I hope, madam, (said the king) you have received no injuries, that make you weary of life: I hope my general has not misbehaved himself to you.’

‘ O, fire! (replied she) I have received no injuries, beside the irreparable loss of my husband, after which I can have no desire to live. As for the General, he has always treated me with the greatest compassion and tenderness: but now will your majesty hear the voice of affliction? will you grant the only wish of an heart in despair? let me be conveyed to some religious house, where I may devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of heaven, far from the knowledge of the General and every other person, who has ever heard my name. I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you with this request; but to whom should we fly in the moment of distress, except to heaven, or its vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its seal to their authority.’

‘ You may depend (returned the king) upon every endeavour of my power, to make you happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the General, in your desire of being retired from the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenuous; I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own virtue and my command.’

‘ O, fire! (replied she) mistake not the incoherencies of distraction; the General has always treated me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the only thing my soul could disapprove in his behaviour. He offered me honourable love; but, alas, my husband! my
dead

‘ dead husband has possession of this heart ! there
 ‘ he is buried ! nor ever shall another love disturb
 ‘ his dear remembrance.’

‘ Madam, be comforted, (returned the king ;)
 ‘ such virtue as your’s is the peculiar care of hea-
 ‘ ven ; you may be happy yet ; your husband may
 ‘ be still alive : in the disorders of these unhappy
 ‘ times, many strange things happen : many who
 ‘ are thought to be alive are long since dead ; many
 ‘ who have been long thought dead are found to
 ‘ be alive.’—‘ *O fire ! what can your words im-
 ‘ port ? you would not jest with misery ! you can not
 ‘ speak in vain ! O, am I yet to hope after so long
 ‘ despair ?*’ — ‘ Hope ! always hope ! but I shall
 ‘ send a proper person to explain my words.’

Saying this, the king went to the door of his
 tent, and seeing her husband bursting with anxiety
 and impatience, he called him, ‘ Go (said he) in
 ‘ there, and see what blessings heaven reserves
 ‘ for virtue ; go in alone ; such meltings of the
 ‘ soul as must attend your meeting are too deli-
 ‘ cate to be exposed to other eyes.’

Then turning to the general, ‘ You have be-
 ‘ haved nobly, my friend, (said he) in such
 ‘ temptation, which was almost too great for
 ‘ human virtue ; had you injured such excellence,
 ‘ dear as you are to my heart, your life should
 ‘ have expiated the crime. But you have be-
 ‘ haved nobly ; in such a trial, it is virtue to
 ‘ refrain from vice ; the errors you have fallen
 ‘ into are but the weaknesses of nature ; for to have
 ‘ been insensible to her beauty and perfections
 ‘ would have argued a deficiency in humanity. —
 ‘ But beware, my friend, of indulging those pas-
 ‘ sions ; they enervate the heart and wean the soul
 ‘ insensibly from virtue ; the example is before
 ‘ thine

‘ thine eyes ; see how the violence of love has
‘ been able to urge the noble heart of this wo-
‘ man’s husband, to desert his charge, to enter
‘ into the service of his enemies, to fight against
‘ the dictates of his own conscience : think of this
‘ and be more cautious for the future ; the heart
‘ of a soldier has not room for love.’

The General, unable to reply, threw himself
at his feet, and embraced his knees. ‘ I under-
‘ stand you, (said the king, smiling) your passion
‘ is not quite cured ; but you shall have employ-
‘ ment to wear off this rust of idleness : return to
‘ your command this moment, and expect my far-
‘ ther orders.’

The General obeyed, and the king addressing
those around him, ‘ To be without fault (said he)
‘ were not to be a man ; he is the best who has
‘ the smallest ; and allowance is to be made for
‘ human frailty, where the temptation is too
‘ great for human virtue.’

As the king said this, the stranger and his wife
came out together, and throwing themselves at
his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful ex-
tasy. ‘ Arise, (said the monarch) and be happy
‘ in each other. I have restored you your wife,
‘ (said he to the husband) and am ready to do
‘ you every further instance of justice which you
‘ can demand.’

‘ My soul is satisfied, O gracious king ; my
‘ soul is satisfied, (replied he ;) I ask no more of
‘ heaven, but to reward your goodness ; your
‘ justice and compassion.’

‘ But there is one thing more to be considered,
‘ (said the king :) your estate was wasted ; your
‘ houses burned by my soldiers ; I do not know
‘ the loss you may have suffered : take this, (giv-
‘ ing

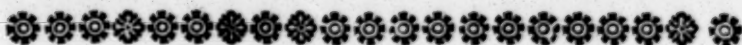
‘ ing him a large purse of gold) if that is not
 ‘ sufficient to repair it, when heaven in mercy
 ‘ to mankind shall bid the calamities of war to
 ‘ cease, if my life is spared, come to me and I
 ‘ will remove every cause of your complaint. I
 ‘ do not ask you to enter into my service in this
 ‘ war, but if your honour, your conscience op-
 ‘ pose it not, you may expect every encourage-
 ‘ ment due to your merit.’

‘ O fire! it is too much! your goodness
 ‘ overwhelms me! I will retire from the seat
 ‘ of war! I will implore heaven for your hap-
 ‘ piness and safety; and tho’ I cannot, may not
 ‘ fight for you, my arm shall never more be
 ‘ raised against you.’

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no less happy in being the author of their happiness, than his goodness and bounty had made them. — I here quitted the service of this great prince, being in the purse which he gave to the stranger. The happiness which this pair experienced in being thus unexpectedly restored to each other is not to be expressed; the delicacy of their love being as much too sublime for description, as the sensuality of other scenes is beneath it. In a word; they wanted, they wished for nothing more, and to secure the possession of what they enjoyed, they resolved to go and live privately with his brother, an ecclesiastick in *Vienna*, till the war should be at an end, and they might with safety return into their own country. This resolution was soon taken; they applied for passports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of such a scene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I see you are desirous that I should give you a character of him; but I must not gratify your curiosity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greatest of men: but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgment from his past, for his future life. Success may elevate; misfortune may sour his mind; and, so overthrow that equality of it, which now raises him almost above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly steady enough to be relied on: so that his dependance is solely on the attachment of his own subjects, and the strength of his own soul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I must say, that if he falls, it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his struggles will exhaust their strength, and leave them an easy prey to a foe, (*the Turk*) whose silence makes them not apprehensive of him, but who laughs in his heart to see them thus do his work, and destroy against each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A design which he certainly meditates, and will not lose a moment to put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.



C H A P. VII.

CHRYSA arrives in VIENNA, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in ENGLAND. He is sent to PERU. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to EUROPE to prepare matters better.

IF the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress: but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing in the fields and high roads, of wounds, sickness, famine, and every various kind of misery, which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace.

The moment I saw this ecclesiastick, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised

a curiosity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

It was not long before this curiosity was gratified; for the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to walk in his garden, and sitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus.

‘ It is many years, my dearest brother, since
‘ I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various
‘ have been the climates I have gone through!
‘ various the vicissitudes of my fortune since that
‘ day! from despair to exultation! from royal
‘ affluence and power to apprehension of perishing
‘ by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not
‘ at my words; I will explain them to you in a
‘ short view of my life, which it is necessary I
‘ should give you, to prepare you for the participation
‘ of secrets, in which your assistance
‘ may be employed in establishing the most extensive
‘ and firm power, which ever yet was
‘ raised upon this globe. — You may remember,
‘ though you were then very young, that the
‘ representations of the *Jesuit* to whose care our
‘ education was committed, made such an impression
‘ on me, that in despite of my father’s threats and intreaties, I renounced my
‘ patrimony in your favour, and taking only a
‘ small sum of money to defray the expences of
‘ my journey, went directly to *Rome* with my
‘ tutor, where I readily obtained admission into
‘ the *Society of Jesus* as soon as I had gone
‘ through the usual preparatory forms of education.

‘ Nothing remarkable happened to me during
 ‘ the first years of my being professed, my studies
 ‘ engrossing my whole time and attention, in which
 ‘ I made such a proficiency, that the general of
 ‘ the order thought it proper to send me into the
 ‘ world, in the service of the society.

‘ The first stage of my mission was to *Eng-*
 ‘ *land*, whither I went to counteract the poison
 ‘ which was dispensing against us, by an apostate
 ‘ of our order, who under the pretence of em-
 ‘ ploying his abilities in the service of the society,
 ‘ had been admitted to all the libraries, and suf-
 ‘ fered to take extracts from all the records of the
 ‘ church. But no sooner had he made such a
 ‘ collection, as he thought sufficient for his pur-
 ‘ pose, than he fled to *England*, his native
 ‘ country, where renouncing his vows and reli-
 ‘ gion, he turned the weapons which had been
 ‘ entrusted in his hands for the defence of the
 ‘ church, against her, employing the abstracts
 ‘ he had made to the defamation of the cha-
 ‘ racter, and subversion of the power, of the *Holy*
 ‘ *See*.

‘ My success in this my first negotiation, (for
 ‘ in defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and
 ‘ common sense, by plausible insinuations, by
 ‘ forged certificates, or, which was the same thing,
 ‘ by certificates from people who would cer-
 ‘ tify any thing in their own favour, against a
 ‘ man who attacked the very fundamentals of
 ‘ their power; by bribery, subornation, perjury,
 ‘ and every kind of artifice, I, in a great mea-
 ‘ sure, defeated his design, and overturned the
 ‘ authority of his work;) my success, I say, in
 ‘ this difficult undertaking, for he had gone out
 ‘ from among ourselves, and was versed in our
 ‘ whole

‘ whole science, encouraged the order to continue me in that mission, but in an higher office.

‘ The laws, religion, and government of the nation were now the objects assigned to my attacks, in which I laboured with various success for some year, in every character which human volubility could assume. I was a quaker; a methodist; a deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the government, as the prevailing humour of the day promised attention to my writings. The sea which flows around that island, being not more unsteady than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they by every breath of popular rumour.

‘ I proceeded thus for some time, with various success, till happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissention between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both; the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight, from an ignominious death, which the resentment of those whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to.

‘ My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order. On the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.

‘ I was therefore sent, the next year, to what
 ‘ is called *the Spanish* world, but is really *the*
 ‘ *Jesuit’s* heaven in *America*, where matters of the
 ‘ highest moment were just ripe for execution.
 ‘ — When I came there I found things in a
 ‘ forwardness too great for their foundation ;
 ‘ the eagerness of some of our people hurrying
 ‘ on events before proper preparation had ensured
 ‘ their success. In short, they were ready to
 ‘ revolt from *Spain* and *Portugal* before they had
 ‘ made provisions to support themselves in such
 ‘ an attempt. They wanted European officers,
 ‘ soldiers, arms, and ammunition, for on the
 ‘ natives there is no dependance ; but, above
 ‘ all, the time was unfavourable. The powers
 ‘ they meant to attack in this vital part, were at
 ‘ peace with all the world, and consequently at
 ‘ liberty to turn their whole force against them.

‘ I therefore counselled them to moderate their
 ‘ zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a
 ‘ more favourable minute should make their suc-
 ‘ cess more probable. But they would not hear-
 ‘ ken to my advice, but attributed it to envy,
 ‘ or want of resolution : on which I left them to
 ‘ their own ill-fortune, and hastened home to pro-
 ‘ vide a remedy, for evils which I could not pre-
 ‘ vent.’



C H A P. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shows the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN and PORTUGAL, are to be brought into the war with ENGLAND. He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular, design.

‘ THE event has confirmed my opinion ;
 ‘ by striking too soon, the blow has been
 ‘ ineffectual. However things, though discon-
 ‘ certed by this precipitancy, are not quite ruin-
 ‘ ed ; and care may yet repair the effects of their
 ‘ folly.

‘ In this cause I now labour, in concert with
 ‘ others of my brethren in every court of *Europe* ;
 ‘ and I have the satisfaction to think that we have
 ‘ a prospect of success. The only obstacle that
 ‘ retards us at present, is the difficulty of mak-
 ‘ ing the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* enter into
 ‘ the war against *England*. Could we bring
 ‘ this to bear, our work would be easy. The
 ‘ mighty naval power of *England* will not only
 ‘ prevent their sending over forces to oppress us,
 ‘ before we can establish our power, but will
 ‘ also assist us to carry on the war, to share in the
 ‘ spoil, and distress their enemies.

‘ But while the present kings are on the
 ‘ thrones of those kingdoms it will be scarcely
 ‘ possible to bring our designs to perfection, they

‘ are so utterly averse to hazarding the consequences of a war, with a nation from whose alliance they receive such advantages. — The first thing therefore which we do must be to remove them. The former has already swallowed his death, though the process will be so slow as to escape suspicion! with the other, such caution is not necessary, nor is there time for it. The arm is already lifted against him, for a stroke that will terrify the world.

‘ When these obstacles are removed, the execution of our designs will meet with no farther delay. The successors to these princes we have secured such an influence on, that we can work them to whatever we please, and have already poisoned their minds with prejudices against *England* *.

‘ To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience to command our forces, is the next object of our care. Shall I candidly own to you, that such a length of time and multiplicity of affairs had almost obliterated all my remembrance of my family; but the moment I heard your name mentioned with the respect due to your merits in the present war, a flood of instant fondness melted my heart, and tears of tenderest joy acknowledged that I had a brother. I immediately gave notice to our General, and by his order am empowered to treat thus with you.

‘ On my engagement for your fidelity, for your abilities are known to be far superior to

* The conduct of the present king of SPAIN, hitherto, shews that the Jesuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at least.

‘ any that shall oppose you, I am commissioned
‘ to offer you the supreme command of all our
‘ forces in this great undertaking. With what
‘ joy I make this offer, the pleasure that you
‘ would feel in serving your brother, can best
‘ enable you to judge.

‘ Though I will tell you farther, that mine is
‘ raised higher than common feelings can convey
‘ a notion of. I have hitherto only unfolded the
‘ general design of our order, in which I am but
‘ a party, though a principal and material one.
‘ But shall I tell you also, that my designs terminate not with their’s: as your command
‘ will make you master of all their force; and
‘ as power is the consequence of that, you will
‘ be able to confer it where you please; or indeed rather to retain it in your own hands,
‘ while I shall only ease you of the trouble of conducting and establishing the policy of an infant
‘ state.

‘ This was my motive for writing to you so
‘ pressingly to come to me to *Vienna*. This is
‘ the end which I have been labouring for all my
‘ life. I am advanced in years, and shall never
‘ marry to beget an heir; you are young and will
‘ have many. Assist me therefore to acquire a
‘ throne, which must descend to your posterity:
‘ a throne, which by holding it at first, as under
‘ the sovereignty of the order, will soon be established by them, even beyond their own power
‘ to shake.

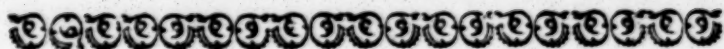
‘ I have now unbosomed myself to my brother, with all the confidence of so near an alliance. You will perhaps wonder at my openness, with one whom I have not seen since he
‘ was as child. But I know your character in

‘ life: and, above all, I know myself safe from
 ‘ being betrayed, because the information would
 ‘ not be received.

‘ Consider, therefore, whether you will em-
 ‘ brace this offer! whether you will reign in a
 ‘ splendour that would dazzle the eyes of the
 ‘ greatest prince in Europe, or live here in fla-
 ‘ very and dependance! The alternative will
 ‘ not admit a moment’s hesitation: I see you
 ‘ yield. I will acquaint our General with it;
 ‘ you and your wife shall remain here with me,
 ‘ till the proper time for all our departure comes,
 ‘ which will depend on circumstances, not yet
 ‘ settled. In the mean time we shall have an
 ‘ opportunity of conferring on these subjects to-
 ‘ gether, and preparing all things for our under-
 ‘ taking in a manner that shall ensure success.’

Though my master made no reply to this proposal that testified the least-disapprobation of it, I could easily see that many parts of the scheme affected him with the strongest abhorrence. At the same time that the offer of royalty was a temptation which shook his resolution, and almost vanquished his virtue.

His brother saw the conflict in his heart with pleasure: had he yielded readily and without reluctance, he should have withdrawn his confidence from such a depravity of soul; and the struggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice, is lost.



C H A P. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in GERMANY, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.

THE Jesuit the next evening resumed the conversation, and to remove every doubt of success that might deter his brother from joining in his designs, proceeded thus.

‘ My brother, (said he) there is nothing so
 ‘ disgusting to a rational man as the mistakes and
 ‘ blunders which passion, prejudice, pride and
 ‘ ignorance produce in the conduct of all the
 ‘ courts in the world, even ours at *Rome* not be-
 ‘ ing quite exempt from them, though the freest
 ‘ of all others. As for this of *Vienna*, it is, at
 ‘ present, a scene, where every absurd, every
 ‘ destructive passion rules. — Among these must
 ‘ you seek for the sources of the present war, that
 ‘ lays all *Germany* waste: Female pride, piqued
 ‘ by some slighting expressions, from one esteem-
 ‘ ed inferior in rank, and stimulated by a desire
 ‘ of recovering by surprize, what had been
 ‘ yielded, or rather extorted by treaty, influenc-
 ‘ ed this sagacious court, in conjunction with
 ‘ that of *Saxony*, to form designs against the
 ‘ king of *Bulgaria*: but the vigilance of that
 ‘ monarch prevented their designs, of which he
 ‘ had timely notice, and before their schemes
 ‘ were ripe for execution, he boldly attacked

K 5

‘ them,

‘ them, and so anticipated the blow meditated
‘ against him.

‘ So daring a step surprized all *Europe*, and
‘ influenced many who were unacquainted with
‘ the motives of it, to take part against him,
‘ while more did for private advantage. — Of
‘ these *France* was the first; who concluding a
‘ league with her ancient enemy, in despite of
‘ family animosity, has entered into a war, that
‘ seems not to concern her at all; nor indeed
‘ does it in the obvious consequences of it, but
‘ she has farther designs in view, and in return
‘ for the assistance she gives to crush this prince,
‘ is to receive from the house of *Austria* these
‘ dominions in the *Netherlands*, which have cost
‘ the greatest part of *Europe* such deluges of
‘ blood, for above a century, to keep out of her
‘ hands: while this court, inattentive to the
‘ consequences that must attend *France’s* getting
‘ possession of these long contested places, has
‘ blindly, basely entered into a league with a fa-
‘ mily that has been labouring her ruin for so
‘ many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all
‘ the states, who have supported her in them. —
‘ The other nations who have acceded to this
‘ alliance, have acted from motives merely mer-
‘ cenary in the first view, fighting for the pay
‘ promised them by the *Imperial* and *French*
‘ courts, the latter of whom has stretched her
‘ generosity so far, as to undertake supporting her
‘ new ally with money as well as men.

‘ But it is not improbable, that they may all
‘ be disappointed, and the king of *Bulgaria* not
‘ only escape the ruin meditated against him,
‘ but also retort it on the machinators; one of
‘ the principal of whom, the *Saxon*, has already
‘ had

‘ had abundant cause to repent of his undertak-
‘ ing. As for this court, it now fights *pro aris &*
‘ *focis*, as may be said, for if that hero is vic-
‘ torious, nothing less is to be expected here,
‘ than the total loss of the imperial dignity, or
‘ whose authority there want not many instances
‘ of the most flagrant abuse, to vindicate such a
‘ revolution.

‘ But of all the effects of this unnatural com-
‘ bination, there is not one more base than the
‘ ingratitude with which this court has behaved
‘ to that of *England*, whose blood and treasure
‘ have often supported it against the very power
‘ of *France*, when every other human assistance
‘ had deserted it; and established it in its present
‘ grandeur, almost at the price of its own ruin.
‘ — But now all those benefits are forgot, and
‘ because *England* will not tamely look on, (if
‘ not perhaps assist) to see the fabrick, which she
‘ has erected at so vast an expence, overturned
‘ to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince allied
‘ to her by blood and interest, sacrificed to avarice
‘ and pride, all her former services are held as
‘ cancelled, and herself treated with the rancour
‘ of the greatest enemy.

‘ While *England*, thus supports her character
‘ of generosity, and acts with prudence; the
‘ *Dutch*, as if infatuated, stand quietly to see the
‘ barrier, which cost themselves even so much
‘ in erecting for their defence, thus given away
‘ to the very power against whom it was erected;
‘ and who, they cannot be insensible, means
‘ nothing less than their ruin, as soon as it can
‘ strike the blow, to effect. But such is the de-
‘ generacy of that people, from every sentiment
‘ of virtue, publick and private, that they will

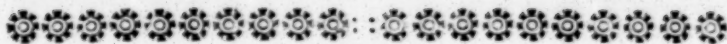
‘ not give up the opportunity of present gain, to
 ‘ save their state from so evident, so imminent
 ‘ ruin; vainly perhaps expecting that *England*
 ‘ will still pursue the schemes of *knight-errantry*,
 ‘ which have so long made her fight the quarrels
 ‘ of her neighbours, while they themselves look-
 ‘ ed on almost as if unconcerned in the event;
 ‘ and will be moved by the cries of the *distressed*
 ‘ *states*, to remedy the mistakes, and repair the
 ‘ losses of their *High-Mightinesses*.

‘ While every other state in *Europe* is thus
 ‘ employed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all the
 ‘ advantages of peace, prudently taking no part
 ‘ in a war which does not in the least concern
 ‘ them. Of these, the former, like the old lion
 ‘ in the fable, is only terrible to ignorant ap-
 ‘ prehension, on account of what it has been,
 ‘ and is now pacifick and harmless, because it no
 ‘ longer has the power of doing harm. Sensible
 ‘ of this weakness, it sleeps in the shadow of a
 ‘ mighty name, and mixes not in disputes which
 ‘ must only draw it into difficulties, without any
 ‘ prospect of advantage to engage it in the at-
 ‘ tempt. But it must not be let to enjoy this
 ‘ state of tranquility so contrary to our designs
 ‘ any longer; and as the present government
 ‘ there is determined to persist in the measures
 ‘ that support it, it must be overturned to make
 ‘ way for those who will be more obedient to our
 ‘ advice.

‘ A method which we must also pursue with
 ‘ *Portugal*, for though its strength is almost be-
 ‘ neath the rank of an independant, much less a
 ‘ royal state, yet upon the account of its wealth,
 ‘ which might hire forces to oppress us, it must
 ‘ be worked up, to take the same step, and break
 ‘ with

‘ with *England*, as I have said before, to which
‘ it has already made large advances, by several
‘ most unjust, and injudicious encroachments, on
‘ the trade of that nation.

‘ As for the war between *France* and *England*,
‘ it arises solely from the contradiction between
‘ the interests of the two nations, which nature
‘ has set in an opposition impossible to be reconciled. But the seat of this war is so remote
‘ from hence, that it would have no influence
‘ on the affairs of *Europe*, did not the successes of
‘ the *English* prevent *France* from giving the assistance that was expected, and might be effectual to the designs of this court, for they have
‘ so absolutely ruined her trade, that she is no longer able to fulfil her engagements with *Russia*
‘ particularly, and the several courts of *Germany*,
‘ whom she undertook to pay, for fighting the quarrel of her ally; so that the former, who
‘ had no other motive but the money, for entering into the war at first, will of course, and
‘ the latter must of necessity, desert that cause, not having any internal support of their own, since
‘ this has failed them. Indeed the *Russians*,
‘ finding all the mighty promises which were made them, vanish into air, begin to be sick
‘ of their bargain already, and long again for the solid advantages of their alliance with *England*. As for this court, it is now making its
‘ last effort, and if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other resource, than shamefully to receive the law from a prince, upon whom it
‘ made so unjust an attempt.’



C H A P. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. CHRYSAL changes his service.

‘ THIS short but distinct view of the present
 ‘ situation of the affairs of *Europe* must convince you, that a general peace must soon be
 ‘ concluded, the parties that would, not being
 ‘ able to, continue the war much longer; and
 ‘ therefore *we* must be speedy in the execution of
 ‘ our designs, or the opportunity will be lost, for
 ‘ it would be impossible to make even the pride
 ‘ of *Spain*, or the avarice of *Portugal*, take the
 ‘ measures we want, at a time when *England* is
 ‘ disengaged from other enemies. I have drawn
 ‘ this sketch to shew you, that *our* designs are not
 ‘ rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest
 ‘ knowledge and insight into things. This must
 ‘ remove every scruple that may arise from doubt
 ‘ of success. — But there is one thing more, which
 ‘ must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our
 ‘ undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this
 ‘ is to evince the justice of it, and of the means
 ‘ designed to accomplish its success. —

‘ Of this matter you must not pretend to
 ‘ judge by the vulgar rules, obtruded by design, upon the ignorance of the world, and
 ‘ which no wise man observes, who has it in his
 ‘ power

power to break them with impunity. — Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness, by every means within his power: this is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion, by which the wise few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance and subjection.

But that it is really the truth, and as such made the rule of action, by all the states and princes in the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by any one, who has considered the systems of policy and government, which are, and ever have been, established by them.

For if it was not an undoubted maxim, that power constitutes the rule of justice, how inconsistent would be the actions of all mankind? How could a state devise laws to punish the man with death, who goes into his neighbour's field, and steals his ox, and, at the same time, send armies to invade, spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neighbours? How could a poor pirate be hanged for robbing a single ship, and fleets immediately after sent avowedly to destroy the whole trade of the same nation? If a state of war is alledged, that is the very imposition of which I spoke. Every man has as good a *natural* right to declare war with his neighbour, as the state, he lives in, has with another state; and every right that is not natural, is an usurpation, and void. This is the true philosophy of life, stripped of the idle dreams of enthusiasm, and selfish misrepresentations of design.

As for religion, look over the whole race of mankind, and try if you can find one who practises what he professes: this is an incon-
testible

' testible proof, that none believe it ; as it is also
 ' that there is no necessity they should, else would
 ' the want of faith and obedience be punished,
 ' by that power which is thought to enjoin them ;
 ' whereas, on the contrary, it is always most
 ' successful, as it affords means, which those
 ' restraints forbid. I observed that in the begin-
 ' ning of our conversation on this subject, you
 ' seemed shocked at my mentioning the necessity
 ' of removing the persons who oppose our de-
 ' signs, and particularly when I said, the *Spani-*
 ' *ard* had swallowed his death. But this is all
 ' prejudice, and want of extending your view
 ' beyond the surface of things.

' For how much better is the method we take,
 ' of striking the single person against whom our
 ' design is levelled, than that pursued, not only
 ' without reproach, but even encouraged by ap-
 ' plause, of involving the innocent with the
 ' guilty, (innocent I mean in respect to us) and
 ' laying waste whole nations to bring a prince to
 ' death ? How much better would it have been
 ' for this court to have removed the king of *Bul-*
 ' *garia* by poison, or a dagger, than to have de-
 ' stroyed millions, as they have done in the pur-
 ' suit of his death, by this destructive war ?
 ' This is demonstration ! this is conviction to
 ' him who dares open his eyes to see it ! Judge
 ' now of *our* undertaking by this invariable sys-
 ' tem, and shew me one objection to it.'

This long dissertation was not delivered at one
 time ; it was the substance of many conversa-
 tions, by which the Jesuit so wrought upon his
 brother, that he resigned himself wholly to his
 disposal, and entered sincerely into his designs.
 The only objection he made, (and that was not
 urged

urged against him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the society, the prejudice of education being still so strong with him, that he could not yet abstract things so nicely, as to consider assassination, in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this state of speculation about a week, for my master never stirred out, as he made sickness his excuse for quitting the service, when his brother having occasion for some money to send to *Lisbon*, on the grand design, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that service; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it. — I now changed my master again, and set out for *Lisbon*, in the possession of one of the society, who was to deliver us to a particular person there.



C H A P. XI.

CHRYSAL *proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of GERMANY. A short view of the war between the FRENCH and ENGLISH, with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it, into GERMANY. Insidious ambition meets a just disappointment.*

IN so complicated an undertaking, there necessarily must be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whose motions depends the success of the whole. The person, by whom I was sent to *Lisbon*, was not to go directly thither; but to take a large circuit, and call at several places, in his way, to see that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy should not defeat the design a second time.

It is not necessary to recount all the circumstances of this tour, which, for the most part, were no more than the common occurrences, upon such occasions; I shall, therefore, take notice only of such few, as for their singularity, and importance, may deserve attention. As to the secret motive of the journey (for that alledged was only to inspect, as usual, into the private concerns of the order) it has been already so well explained, that it is sufficient to say, every thing exceeded

exceeded expectation, and gave the strongest assurance of success.

As the war had overspread all *Germany*, it was impossible for my master to avoid falling in, with some of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave him no concern: He was blessed with one of those ready genius's, that can put on any appearance, so naturally, as to deceive suspicion itself; beside, that he had passports, under one character, or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The first event, worth remark, that occurred to us, (for the nature of war, and it's operations in general have been sufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of *Bulgaria*, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller *German* states, (who were hired by the *English*, to defend their own liberties) a small number of *Bulgarians*, and a considerable body of *English* troops.

You are surprized to hear, that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves, in so interesting a cause: but so it is; and so it will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings; for as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expence, they will be ready to sell themselves, to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of, such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have, indeed, this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alledging, that as
their

their ruin would involve greater states, in some inconveniences, they find these will rather submit to this gross imposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up, by others, who would grow too powerful, by this accretion.

Base, as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practised, (and this not by those poorer princes alone; the *Austrians* and *Spaniards* occasionally, and the *Dutch* constantly availing themselves of it,) that *England* in particular has been drawn in, to bear a part, from which by her situation she seemed exempted by heaven, in every war, that has distracted *Europe*, for some ages, to an expence of blood and treasure, which is already severely felt, and must, if pursued much farther, involve it in the very ruin, it thus strives to avert.

There is one, and only one remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent it's being applied, till the evil itself shall work it's own redress; a period, that to human foresight seems not far distant at present. This is taking away the power of those petty tyrants, who disgrace the name of sovereigns, and uniting their territories, into one state, of strength sufficient to support itself. For while those princes have any power left, they will consistently with their present systems of policy oppose this; but the manner in which they have conducted themselves, in this war, if not speedily altered, will so effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to resist, but must passively submit to the dominion, of whoever will undertake their support: an event as much to be desired by their own immediate subjects, as by the other states, which thus suffer, by their absurd,
and

and iniquitous conduct; as the severest form of one government is preferable to the capricious rule, of several tyrants, whose poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the most of their wretched people, without any regard, to the established rules of justice, or even the common rights of humanity. The usual objection to this expedient, of it's overturning the liberty of *Germany*, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight; that boasted liberty being, at present, no more, than the power of those sovereigns, to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which, within just bounds, would really be establishing, not overturning the liberty of mankind.

As to the war, in which the *English* were at this time engaged, it was not to be ascribed solely, to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the *French* had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in *America*, where they already possessed an hundred times more, than they were able to make any use of. The possessions of the *English*, in that part of the globe, were also uselessly extensive; however, the boundaries having been settled between them, usurpations were not to be tolerated, consistently with the honour of the state; beside, if they were taken no notice of, in the beginning, they might in time possibly be extended, to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the seat of which was properly transferred by the *English*, to the place, in which the attack had been made upon them; where the superiority of their naval force, gave them such advantages, that
they

they not only recovered the places, which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the *French* power, in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests, in every other part of the world, where the *French* had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power, and trade.

As it was impossible for the *French*, to recover these losses, directly, and the ambition and avarice, which first gave occasion to the war, was now strengthened by pride, to prevent their making the concessions, on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the seat of the war into *Germany*, and attacked certain powers there, with whom *England* was so inseparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their assistance, in expectation of having all their own losses restored, in return for these territories, if they could get possession of them, which the number of their own land-forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal *Germans*, gave them hopes of accomplishing; a scheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the *English* to protect, and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus solely upon their account. As the *French* at the same time, that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy, against the king of *Bulgaria*, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and *England* still closer, and made him join, as many of his troops, as he could possibly spare, to the army raised by the *English*, upon this indispensable occasion, from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that this army engaged the attention of the *French*, and prevented

vented their joining their forces, to the number of his enemies; beside a considerable assistance, in money, to enable him to support his own troops.

It was necessary for me, to give you this short explanation of the nature of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences, I am going to relate to you.

The army, through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it composed of *Britons*, was commanded by a *German* General, in disgraceful acknowledgment of the want of military merit equal to such a charge, in the natives: though to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the *English*, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the *German* commander, in chief.

Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial, than the inconvenience they were meant to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the *English* found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the *German* troops, with whom they were joined, with contempt, who in return, affected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country to give such impressions of them, as prevented the people from

bringing

bringing them in provisions, with that care and chearfulness which their prompt and generous payment deserved; by which means, they suffered the inconveniences of scarcity, and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though such feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them, were far from striving to restore that harmony, which alone could give success to their designs. The commander in chief either overlooked as beneath his notice, or was prevented by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of those misunderstandings; and the *English* commander, ambitious probably of the supreme command, which he imagined he might easily obtain, if he could make the other sufficiently obnoxious to the *English*, inflamed them, by every artifice he could use.

Nor did he stop here: whenever he was summoned in consequence of his high station, for he was second in command, in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his constant practice to contradict, whatever was proposed by the commander, and to treat all his schemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himself, in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful speaker, and perfectly versed in the theory of war, whereas the commander was a thoughtful, reserved man, of few words, whose whole life had been spent in action, and who could more easily have executed than explained his designs.

The consequences of this disagreement were very detrimental while it lasted, and must in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the *German*, without ever attempting to discuss the affair, with his wordy antagonist, written directly to the *British* sovereign, to inform him, that he was so constantly opposed, in all his designs, by the *English* General, that it was impossible for him to do any thing of moment; wherefore he desired either that he might have leave to resign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious, and dangerous opposition; concluding his letter with these remarkable words. — ‘ Though in a multitude of counsellours there
‘ is said to be much safety; yet in the operations
‘ of war, if many are privy to the councils which
‘ direct them, there never can be that secrecy,
‘ agreement, and dispatch, which are indispen-
‘ sibly necessary to success.’ —

The monarch, who was no stranger to the capitious, and unquiet disposition of the *English* General, was sensible of the justice of the *German*’s complaint, and immediately removed the cause of it, by giving him an unlimited power, to carry on the war, as should appear best to his own private judgment, without consulting with, or being liable to be opposed by, any other person.

It may be thought that the entire removal of the *English* General would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the *English* government made this not quite so proper; as he was descended from one of the most illustrious and powerful families, in the kingdom, and a member of the senate, in which his talent for speaking gave him such weight, that it was judged best, to avoid giving him

cause, for exerting his abilities, in opposition to the measures of the government, by removing him from an employment, which he had solicited, with all his power and interest; especially, as the immense expence of this army began to make the people uneasy, and ready to receive any impression against it. But the event shewed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made use of, to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the *German* General received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his schemes, without ever consulting any person, or even communicating the least hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he sent his orders, with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a severe stroke upon the *English* General, who had been accustomed to canvass the very commands of his king, and therefore could badly brook such subordination, to a person, whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his understanding. However, as it was in vain to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, resolved to seize the first opportunity of defeating his measures, since he could no longer disconcert his councils; and to take hold of the least miscarriage, to attack him, in the *British* senate, at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not, but he should be able to represent things in such a light, as to have him removed from the command, which must of course devolve upon himself.

This account, my master received from a Jesuit the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the society the more effectually with

the *French* king, and secure his interest, and protection, should any unforeseen accident defeat their design, had entered into the service of the *English* General, as his valet de chambre, for the better opportunity of discovering the schemes of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of, to their enemies.



C H A P. XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit, it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy ENGLISH soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.

THE very morning after my master's arrival, in the camp, an event happened that astonished all *Europe*. The *French* army was so greatly superiour to that of the allies, that the General was obliged to be entirely upon the defensive, nor had his consummate experience, and indefatigable assiduity been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat, that seemed to threaten the loss of the country, he was to defend. But through all these difficulties, he persisted steadily, in his own plan, and preserved his attention cool and ready to take any advantage, that might offer.

Accordingly that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy, that indicated a design of attacking him, he ordered a small, but select body of forces, almost all of them *English*, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat, as he should see expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops soon changed the face of the affair; for not satisfied with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them, in their turn, which they did with such irresistible valour, that the *French* were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have said before, that the transactions in a battle, are so complicated, and confounded with each other, that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description; I shall therefore, enter no farther, into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the *English* General, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his friend.

The moment, the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops, which he had ordered to march, toward the enemy, he sent to the *English* General, who commanded all the horse, in that wing, to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation, when a messenger from the General, informed him, that a part of the army was engaged, in the plain, that lay before him, and ordered him to march the
ca-

cavalry, under his command, to their assistance. Surprise, and resentment, at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason, but he recovered himself in a moment, and drawing his sword, with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders, he had received, when another messenger arrived, and delivered them, but with some variation.

This, the General instantly perceived, and resolved to take advantage of, to justify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences, that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate, with the messengers, about this difference in their orders, and finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the General, for an explanation of them, by trifling away the critical moment, in which manner, he expected that the part of the allied army, which was engaged, would be beaten, for want of a proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and saving the whole army, from a defeat, and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the General, by attributing the whole misfortune, to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition, and resentment, disappointed it, be-

yond all human probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext, to abandon them to ruin.

The situation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the General, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived, than described. The cool distant reception he met with gave him notice of the storm, which was ready to burst over his head: and he saw, that the scheme he had laid so deeply, to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accusations, which he had intended to bring against his General, would now recoil upon himself, with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the General next morning publicly passed an implicate censure on his conduct, which he saw received with such universal approbation, that he thought it proper, to resign his command, for fear of personal insult, from the incensed soldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt, but the interest of his family and his own elegance and address would vindicate his character, at least, if not still accomplish his designs, against the General.

Though I lost sight of him, at this time, yet as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of this whole affair, I think it better, and less trouble to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative, with it, in another place.

The first construction which was put upon his conduct was that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to those under his command gave no small weight to,

to, from this generally just maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*; and which many insignificant parts of his former conduct were alledged to confirm; but I have shewn, that it sprung from another, much less justifiable cause; I say, less justifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for than for his being born blind, or lame; but such a scheme, as his, was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackest circumstances.

The first consequence of his quitting the army, was a perfect harmony, between the *English* and *Germans*; the glory, they had acquired, upon this occasion, raising the spirits of the former so high, that they thought no more of the inconveniences they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved; and entered into friendship, with their fellow soldiers, as if there had never been any jealousy between them; who on the other hand were so struck, with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices, with the natives of the country, as before. But what compleated the happiness of the *English* was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirst for glory, under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour, upon all occasions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which they esteemed a sufficient recompence for the severest fatigues, and dangers: an indulgence, which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being ex-

posed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence, than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not to do any service.

As soon, as the late General arrived in *England*, his sovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many very lucrative, and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service; an instance of clemency which few other princes would have shewn, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him.

But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity; or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly asserted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious innocence.

This was the highest insult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his justice, and questioned his power in the tenderest point; however, he scorned to take any advantage of it, but waiving every personal resentment, condescended to grant the trial, demanded; but with this express declaration, that as it was at the instance of the party, and without any legal necessity, he should abide by the sentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere farther. But this declaration was of little weight, for the General was well advised, before he solicited the trial, that according to the laws of the country, he was exempted, from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a *Briton* subject to military law, by which he must be
tried;

tried; and this exemption was the real reason of his being so eager for a trial.

But though his life might be out of danger by this subterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character, beyond all possibility of recovery, as upon the most impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious consequences of it, by the loss of so favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and perhaps putting an end to the war, by that means, appeared so plainly, that the justice of his being dismissed the service, was not only asserted, but he was also declared incapable of ever being admitted into it, again: and thus he fell, a second time, a victim to his own schemes. As to the victory, which had been the immediate cause of his ruin, as soon as the circumstances of it, as related here, came to be known, to the world, the General lost the glory, which in the first emotions of joy and admiration had been so lavishly heaped upon him for it; and it was justly ascribed to accident, as human foresight could not possibly have formed any plan, for such an improbable instance of bravery, as that which obtained it.



C H A P. XIII.

CHRYSAI arrives in BRUSSELS. *The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.*

AS soon as the confusion of such an event was a little over; and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerours, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had born there, pursued his journey to *Brussels*, in his own, where he was to receive farther instructions; for though *the great design* was carried on, by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of *the old man of the mountain*.

It was some time, before these instructions arrived; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gawdy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the Governour, who beside the advantage of that character, to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure, in the most extensive sense of the phrase, and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose it's gratification; though he had the address to maintain the dignity of his station, by his secrecy, and regard to propriety of appearance.

There

There is nothing that contributes so much to the influence, which the Jesuits possess over the minds of the people, as their knowledge of the secret history of their lives. To acquire this, they stop at nothing; they assume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every scene of vicious pleasure, where reserve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears, without disguise. Such an opportunity of information therefore was not to be missed. Accordingly, the evening after my master's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themselves, in a convenient situation, to see all the company, and make their remarks, without danger of being over-heard; such as were merely political, I shall omit, as I am sick of such a stupid subject, and only take notice of those, which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.—‘Observe that little, mean looking, ill-favoured person,’ (said the confessor, continuing a conversation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) ‘who acts as master of the ceremonies. You see his feeble frame is quite worn out with debauchery, and he nods over the grave in anticipated old age, yet still he affects an air of levity and youth, and strives to inflame others, by his discourse, to vices, which he is no longer able to participate of, himself: but this is all grimace, and he assumes this appearance of gayety, to hide the gloomy discontent, and remorse, that prey upon his heart.

‘There is something so particular, in the story of this man, that it may be worth while to give you a short sketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country, where his father, from the lowest state of poverty, amassed such wealth, in trade,

L 6

‘that

' that his vanity prompted him to get his family
 ' ennobled, to hide the meanness of his original.
 ' There is something so absurdly wrong, in pur-
 ' chased nobility, that it always turns the heads
 ' of the purchasers, perhaps in just retribution,
 ' for so flagrant an abuse of an institution,
 ' meant as a reward for merit. The *ennobled*
 ' man lived not to shew the truth of this observa-
 ' tion; but his sons abundantly made up for
 ' that, the elder lavishing his wealth, on every
 ' kind of expensive vanity, and the younger, the
 ' person you see, glorying in every kind of de-
 ' bauchery, as if vice and folly were the prero-
 ' gatives of their *honour*.

' In the course of a life of pleasure he con-
 ' tracted an acquaintance with that lady, whom
 ' you see at the upper end of the room. Though
 ' nature had never meant him for a man of in-
 ' trigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the
 ' little powers she gave, he thought it would
 ' have been inconsistent with his character of a
 ' man of pleasure, not to commence an affair of
 ' gallantry, with so desirable a person. Ac-
 ' cordingly, as she happened to be married, he
 ' directly cultivated an intimacy, with her hus-
 ' band, into whose unguarded confidence, he
 ' so far insinuated himself, as to receive many
 ' acts of friendship from him. To a man, who
 ' had any sense of honour, or honesty, this would
 ' have been an irresistible reason for desisting
 ' from his base design; but he was above such
 ' *vulgar* restraints, and genteely took the oppor-
 ' tunity of the husband's friendship to debauch
 ' the virtue of the wife.

' Nothing but the most abandoned profligacy
 ' in the woman could have given success to such
 ' an

an attempt, as the husband exceeded the passion in every natural endowment of mind and person, beyond every degree of comparison; but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for: it will loath the most exquisite delicacies, and fete itself on garbage.

They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiscretion betrayed them. It is impossible to describe the astonishment and rage of the injured husband, at the discovery! Had it been possible, he would have doubted his senses, which were witnesses to his disgrace. In the first emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge, which his superiour strength amply put in his power; but a moment's reflection shewed him the folly of such an action, and determined him to take the safer and more severe revenge of the law.

Accordingly, he withdrew without being perceived by them, and bringing some of his servants to testify their crimes, as soon as he had secured the proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered the room, in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them that it would be proper for them to chuse another scene, for their pleasure, beside his house, retired and left them to their meditations.

This conduct convinced them of his design, and that they had not a moment to lose, to avoid some of the most disagreeable consequences of it: as soon, therefore, as they recovered from the first impressions of their astonishment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement,
for

‘ for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of the
 ‘ state, as soon as they possibly could.

‘ But they might have spared themselves that
 ‘ trouble; the revenge which the husband sought
 ‘ was of another nature: he directly instituted a
 ‘ suit at law, against them, by which, as he
 ‘ had sufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained
 ‘ a divorce from his wife, and such damages against
 ‘ the violator of his bed, as made it impossible
 ‘ for him, ever to return to his country, without
 ‘ he designed to languish out the rest of his days
 ‘ in a prison.

‘ The lovers, in the mean time, were far
 ‘ from being happy, in the uninterrupted enjoy-
 ‘ ment of each other. Variety and the mystery
 ‘ of intrigue were all that tempted them to the
 ‘ correspondence at first; and now, that these
 ‘ were lost, reflection opened their eyes, to the
 ‘ consequences of their folly, and made them
 ‘ look upon each other as the authours of their
 ‘ mutual ruin. Such thoughts soon cool the most
 ‘ ardent love; what effect then must they have
 ‘ upon persons, in their situation? However,
 ‘ necessity obliged them to conceal their senti-
 ‘ ments; and as soon as the divorce gave them
 ‘ liberty, they married, to preserve the appearance
 ‘ of a passion, they never felt, and obtain a sup-
 ‘ port from their families, which they could not
 ‘ have expected on any other terms.

‘ When this was done, and that necessity re-
 ‘ moved, the aversion, which they had long en-
 ‘ tertained, broke out, in the most violent man-
 ‘ ner. They lived in a state of eternal warfare,
 ‘ in which, the wife threw off all regard to de-
 ‘ cency even so far, as to take advantage
 ‘ of her superiour strength, and frequently beat
 ‘ her

‘ her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his upper lip ! the third day of their happy marriage, he received that mark of her rage, from the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his teeth, whose place he now supplies, with artificial ones.

‘ But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it, sooner than he deserved. They had fixed their residence here ; where the prince soon happened to take a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced ; and compleated the infamy of her character, by quitting her second husband, to become his mistress ; in which station you behold her at present.

‘ Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband, for his own base crime, he was insensible of it ; and instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place, where his shame was not known, meanly accepted of the employment, in which you see him, and submitted to be the slave of her vice, and insolence.

‘ But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful monitor of guilt, has awoken his conscience to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and raised a remorse, that wastes his life, tho’ he thus absurdly strives to drown it’s voice, in the noise of vanity and vice.’



C H A P. XIV.

The confessor entertains CHRYSAL's master, with another, not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.

MY master was beginning to make some obvious reflections, on this account, but his friend soon diverted his attention to another object. ‘Observe’ (said he, pointing to a person, who bore all the external marks of nobility, in his habit and appearance) ‘a striking proof of
 ‘ the insignificance of being born to wealth, and
 ‘ honours! Who, that sees the despicable figure,
 ‘ which this man makes here, a voluntary exile
 ‘ from his own country, where his rank and
 ‘ fortune placed him, in the most exalted, and
 ‘ advantageous light, can ever throw away
 ‘ a moment's thought, on heaping up riches,
 ‘ or obtaining honours, to perpetuate his name,
 ‘ and aggrandize his family, the folly and profusion of a single member of which may thus
 ‘ disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues
 ‘ an aggravation of his own degeneracy and reproach.

‘ In a rank, scarce inferiour to that of a sovereign, and possessed of a fortune, sufficient
 ‘ to support it, with dignity to himself, and benefit to the community, did this man enter
 ‘ into

‘ into life ; but a few years of the dissipation of
‘ what is falsely called a life of pleasure distressed
‘ his fortune, and debased his principles to such a
‘ degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed
‘ to have recourse to the mean method of a mer-
‘ cenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and
‘ enable him to support the external appearance
‘ of his character.

‘ The constant consequences of these mar-
‘ riages, might be sufficient to open the eyes of
‘ the unhappy victims of them to such a dangerous
‘ folly ; but vanity possesses so absolute an empire
‘ over the female heart, that nothing can pre-
‘ vent the gratification of it.

‘ The female, whom this person pitched upon,
‘ as proper for his purpose, on account of her im-
‘ mense wealth, was destitute of every charm of
‘ mind and person, to attract or preserve love or
‘ esteem. But few are sensible of their own de-
‘ ficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them.
‘ On his making the first overture to her, all her
‘ real friends took the alarm ; they drew his cha-
‘ racter, in proper colours ; they shewed her,
‘ that necessity, not inclination, was the motive
‘ of his addresses, and they laid the inevitable
‘ consequences of a connection with such a per-
‘ son, before her in the strongest light : but all
‘ was in vain ! Her heart was fixed upon rank
‘ and precedence, and so she could obtain them,
‘ she left the rest to chance.

‘ Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own
‘ mistress, the match was soon made, to the pre-
‘ sent satisfaction of both parties. He got her
‘ fortune, to pay his debts, and pursue his plea-
‘ sures ; and she rode in a coach, with coronets,
‘ and was called *her Grace*.

‘ But

234 C H R Y S A L: *Or, the*

‘ But this mutual happiness did not last long :
 ‘ the moment he got possession of her fortune;
 ‘ all his wishes were fulfilled, and as he had
 ‘ nothing farther to expect, he did not think it
 ‘ necessary for him, to continue any appearances
 ‘ of love, or even complaisance, for an object,
 ‘ really disagreeable to him. Accordingly the
 ‘ very morning after his marriage, he set out;
 ‘ upon a party of pleasure, with some of his former
 ‘ companions; and left the bride, by herself,
 ‘ to receive the compliments, and go through
 ‘ the farce, usual upon such occasions.

‘ Though such behaviour must appear base,
 ‘ and ungenerous to the last degree; yet she
 ‘ had no right to complain of it; as she could
 ‘ not expect any other from his known character,
 ‘ and motives for marriage; she, therefore, put
 ‘ the best face on the matter, and whether
 ‘ from intoxication, at her elevation, or indifference
 ‘ to him, seemed to be insensible of the
 ‘ slight, and went through the ceremony and parade,
 ‘ with all the appearance of pleasure and
 ‘ content, leaving him to pursue his own inclinations,
 ‘ without molestation, or complaint.

‘ But this calm did not hold long. As soon
 ‘ as her new dignity lost the charms of novelty,
 ‘ nature awoke, as from a dream, and convinced
 ‘ her, that something more than empty
 ‘ shew, was necessary to human happiness: but
 ‘ alas! this conviction came too late; and all
 ‘ her expostulations were as ineffectual to induce
 ‘ the tenderness, or esteem of her husband, as those
 ‘ of her friends had been, with her, to prevent
 ‘ her marrying him. On the contrary, they
 ‘ turned his indifference into aversion, and made
 ‘ him

him treat her with indignity and contempt, insulting her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity, that had prompted her to sacrifice her fortune, for a bare title.

Hard as such treatment was to be submitted to, she had no redress; but was obliged to bear it, in silence, without even the poor consolation of compassion to mitigate her sufferings. At length, a farther aggravation of her wrongs gave her the pleasure of revenge, by driving him again into the distresses, from which her folly had relieved him.

In the pursuit of pleasure, to which he had sacrificed his character, and fortune, he never had even the excuse of a refined taste, or particular passion to palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example of his companions, or was a slave to every gross impulse of his own caprice, without the least notion of delicacy, or even decency to direct him. As he was strolling alone about his house, one unhappy evening, when he had no company to divert his thoughts, he happened, just as it grew dark, to overhear two persons, a male and female, in earnest conversation. Curiosity prompting him to listen, he soon discovered that love was the subject of their discourse, in which the man, whom, by his voice, he knew to be one of his huntsman's helpers, was so successful that he persuaded the fair one, to promise him a meeting, half an hour after, in the dog-kennel.

Though the place of assignation might have deterred any person, whose senses, as well as his inclinations, were not totally debauched,
from

' from attempting to supplant the happy lover, the
 ' novelty of such an adventure made his lordship
 ' overlook that, and resolve to supply his dog-boy's
 ' place. Accordingly, he retired unperceived,
 ' and going into the stables, ordered him to be
 ' called and sent him directly on a message, some
 ' miles off, without giving him an opportunity
 ' of letting his mistress know any thing of the
 ' matter.

' As soon as the time appointed drew near,
 ' his lordship went to the agreeable scene, where
 ' the punctual fair one did not let him wait long.
 ' As he was about the dog-boy's size, and the
 ' place was quite dark, she never perceived the
 ' change put upon her, but lavished her caresses
 ' upon him with the greatest tenderness, vowing
 ' never more to have any correspondence, with
 ' the pantry-boy, or scullion, who it seems were
 ' the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be al-
 ' ways constant to him alone; and took her leave
 ' of him, with a promise to meet him there, at
 ' the same time, next evening.

' Disgusting, as every circumstance, of this
 ' affair, should have been, the oddity of it, with
 ' the pleasure of supplanting another, even so mean
 ' a person and in so unworthy an object, made
 ' him determine to be punctual to her appoint-
 ' ment. But then the difficulty was how to pre-
 ' vent his rival's traversing his design, for his
 ' delicacy was not in the least alarmed at the
 ' thought of his participating in her favours. He
 ' was also at a loss, to know who the obliging
 ' female, might be, for the darkness that con-
 ' cealed him was equally favourable to her, and
 ' he was a stranger to her voice, nor did he care
 ' to ask any questions, as that would betray his
 ' own

‘ own imposture, and bring on an explanation
‘ that he did not desire, both as his greatest plea-
‘ sure was in the cheat, and the discovery might
‘ be attended with circumstances he should chuse
‘ to avoid, in case the female was disagreeable
‘ to him.

‘ To obviate all these inconveniences, he or-
‘ dered his rival to attend him the moment he re-
‘ turned, when he gave him a letter to carry that
‘ instant to a gentleman, who lived about twenty
‘ miles off, with directions to be back early the
‘ next day with an answer. This he said aloud,
‘ in the hearing of all his servants, that if his
‘ mistress should happen to hear of her lover’s
‘ being sent from home, she might also have rea-
‘ son to expect his return time enough to keep
‘ the appointment; but to prevent this, he had
‘ desired the person to whom he wrote, to keep
‘ the messenger, as if for an answer of the letter,
‘ two or three days, in which time he concluded
‘ he himself should be tired of his amour.’



C H A P. XV.

*Continued: His lordship's scheme to fling his rival
unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting oc-
casions strange discoveries. Woman never at a
loss. Law often spoils sport.*

‘ **P**leased with the sagacity of this scheme,
‘ he waited for the next evening, with an
‘ impatience that he did not often feel on such
‘ occasions;

‘ occasions ; but an unlucky accident disappoint-
 ‘ ed his designs. The gentleman to whom he
 ‘ wrote the letter happened not to be at home,
 ‘ nor was expected for a day or two ; wherefore,
 ‘ as his lord had ordered him to make haste back,
 ‘ he left the letter, and returned without any
 ‘ delay, perhaps not more in obedience to his
 ‘ orders, than from his impatience to retrieve
 ‘ the disappointment his desires had met, by his
 ‘ absence, the evening before.

‘ As soon as he alighted, therefore, his first
 ‘ care was to find out his mistress, to tell her the
 ‘ reason of his disappointing her the evening be-
 ‘ fore, and to make a new assignation for that ;
 ‘ but what was their mutual surprize, when they
 ‘ came to compare notes ! As he insisted on his
 ‘ not having attended the appointment, she flew
 ‘ into a rage, and accused him of having betrayed
 ‘ her basely to some of his companions ; and as
 ‘ she positively asserted her having met some per-
 ‘ son there, he accused her, with equal warmth,
 ‘ of inconstancy, and sacrificing him to some of
 ‘ his rivals, on whom he vowed the severest ven-
 ‘ geance, if he should ever find him out.

‘ As his altercation was not carried on with
 ‘ much delicacy on either side, it soon produced
 ‘ an absolute rupture between the lovers, who
 ‘ separated with sentiments for each other very
 ‘ different from those with which they met.
 ‘ The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his
 ‘ resentment cooled a little, recollected that it
 ‘ might be proper to let his lord know the suc-
 ‘ cess of his message, who sent for him into his
 ‘ presence directly ; and being freed from his
 ‘ apprehensions, by hearing that he was *but that*

‘ *moment*

‘ moment returned, ordered him to set out again
‘ instantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman,
‘ where-ever he was, and not return without an
‘ answer.

‘ His orders were so urgent, that the fellow
‘ did not dare to make the least delay; but for-
‘ tune, that seemed resolved to cross his lord-
‘ ship’s designs, contrived it so, that he met the
‘ gentleman on his road, without having called
‘ at home, or received the letter that had been
‘ left for him. Upon the dog-boy’s informing
‘ him of it, he concluded, as he was much near-
‘ er to his lordship’s than to his own house, that
‘ it was the readiest way for him to wait upon
‘ him directly, without minding to send the man
‘ for the letter. Accordingly he bade him turn
‘ back, and ride on before him, to acquaint his
‘ lordship of his coming.

‘ Though it was late when he had set out, the
‘ second time, he made such haste, that he reach-
‘ ed home just at the time of his lordship’s ap-
‘ pointment; when it unluckily coming into his
‘ head, that his perfidious mistress might possibly
‘ have taken the advantage of his absence, to
‘ make another assignation in his dog-kennel, the
‘ first thing he did, the moment he dismounted
‘ from his horse, was to go there, to see if any
‘ one had invaded his territories.

‘ Nor was his suspicion disappointed; for the
‘ fair one was so uneasy to unravel the mystery
‘ of the adventure of the evening before, that she
‘ punctually attended her appointment, where
‘ she had not waited many minutes, before her
‘ unknown lover arrived. The scene of their
‘ meeting was so dark, that it was impossible for
‘ either of them to know the other. However,
‘ she

‘ she soon thought of a method to remedy this,
 ‘ which was to purloin something out of his
 ‘ pockets, by which she might discover who he
 ‘ was, without betraying herself; for she soon
 ‘ found, that he knew no more of her, than she
 ‘ did of him.

‘ She had just executed her design, and was
 ‘ taking her leave of her lover, when his jea-
 ‘ lous rival came upon them unawares, and over-
 ‘ hearing their expressions of fondness, was so
 ‘ enraged, that he resolved to take immediate re-
 ‘ venge: accordingly he approached them with-
 ‘ out any noise, and turning the but end of his
 ‘ whip, aimed a stroke, so unluckily, though at
 ‘ a venture, that it felled his lordship to the
 ‘ ground. The female, who instantly guessed
 ‘ what was the matter, took advantage of the
 ‘ darkness to make her escape, which she hap-
 ‘ pily effected without any disaster, the dog-boy
 ‘ stumbling over his fallen adversary, the first step
 ‘ he advanced to pursue her.

‘ His lordship, half-recovered from the blow,
 ‘ laid hold of his antagonist, who grappling
 ‘ with him directly, a battle ensued, in which
 ‘ nobility was so rudely handled, that his lord-
 ‘ ship was obliged to declare himself, and cry
 ‘ out for quarter. It is easy to conceive the con-
 ‘ fusion of the conqueror, upon this discovery; he
 ‘ instantly strove to disengage himself, and make
 ‘ his escape; but his lordship held him fast, pro-
 ‘ mising to forgive him, though, if he would
 ‘ have the discretion never to mention a syllable
 ‘ of the affair, and inform him who the female
 ‘ was with whom he had made the assignation to
 ‘ meet in this place the evening before.

‘ These

‘ These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore eternal secrecy, and readily told his lordship, that the girl was no other than the kitchen-maid’s daughter, who served as a scullion wench under her mother.

‘ This discovery of his mistress’s quality was almost as disagreeable to his lordship, as the effect of the dog-boy’s jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation, and stealing secretly into the house, that he might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his own apartment by himself, to change his cloaths, and wash off the blood and dirt, with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

‘ As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rung for his valet de chambre, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid’s daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master’s taste, was not in the least surprized at his choice of such an object, but obey’d him directly.

‘ The fortunate female, who had found out the quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear she might be suspected of having designedly occasioned the outrage his lordship had lately met: however, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on, and went trembling, and blushing, in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship’s commands.

‘ If he had been surprized at the discovery of
 ‘ her condition, he was much more agreeably so
 ‘ at the sight of her: for though she was far
 ‘ from being handsome, there was something in
 ‘ her face, which with her extreme youth, and a
 ‘ glow of health, that her confusion heighened
 ‘ not a little, struck his fancy in an uncommon
 ‘ manner. He, therefore, without giving her the
 ‘ least hint of what had happened, as he ima-
 ‘ gined she knew nothing of him, made no ce-
 ‘ remony of proposing love to her. But young
 ‘ as she was, she had too much woman in her
 ‘ soul to comply so easily, though there was no-
 ‘ thing she desired more ardently. Accordingly
 ‘ she refused his lordship with the most respectful
 ‘ modesty, and on his urging his request farther,
 ‘ threw herself at his feet, in a flood of tears, and
 ‘ begged him to have compassion upon her friend-
 ‘ less youth and innocence.

‘ Such behaviour would have made him doubt
 ‘ the dog-boy’s information, did not the sound
 ‘ of her voice convince him she was the person.
 ‘ He, therefore, laughed at her artifice, and told
 ‘ her, that as soon as the farce was ended, he
 ‘ should expect another answer, as he knew she
 ‘ had granted to others the favour he asked of
 ‘ her.

‘ This convinced her that he had discovered
 ‘ her, and that it was necessary for her to en-
 ‘ large her scheme, to accomplish the design she
 ‘ had formed, of establishing a lasting interest
 ‘ in his affections. Accordingly, upon his say-
 ‘ ing this, she embraced his knees, in a seeming
 ‘ agony of distress, and conjuring him to have
 ‘ mercy on her folly, owned that she had trans-
 ‘ gressed with one, and one only, who had made
 ‘ such

‘ such an impression upon her heart, that though
‘ she had taken him for another, and knew not
‘ even who he was, she had made a vow, never
‘ to repeat her folly with any other.

‘ The candour of this confession, the greatest
‘ part of which he thought he knew to be true,
‘ compleated her conquest over him. He raised
‘ her from the ground, and embracing her tenderly,
‘ discovered himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She immediately appeared
‘ in public as his mistress, and had the address to
‘ accommodate herself so entirely to his caprices,
‘ that she soon gained the absolute mastery of his
‘ heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned
‘ off, of course, as an offence to her sight, though
‘ not without a considerable gratuity to purchase
‘ his silence; but that was impossible; the moment
‘ he left the house, he looked upon himself
‘ as freed from the necessity of concealing it any
‘ longer, and made it the common subject of his
‘ discourse, till it became as publickly known as
‘ his lordship’s name.

‘ This happened just as his affairs became
‘ again so distressed, that he was forced to withhold
‘ the support he had allowed his wife. She,
‘ therefore, directly took the advantage of it
‘ to sue him for a separate maintenance, on the
‘ plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. The
‘ fact was too flagrant to be denied, and his
‘ infatuation was such, that he would not remove
‘ the cause, to avoid the consequence of the suit,
‘ but chose to quit his native country, and come
‘ here with his mistress, to live in the
‘ disesteem and contempt you see him treated
‘ with, on the poor pittance of his fortune, which
‘ the law allows him for his support; the rest,

‘ much the greater part of it, being assigned for
 ‘ the maintenance of his wife, and payment of
 ‘ his debts.’



C H A P. XVI.

*CHRYSAL's master meets an old acquaintance, who
 relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes
 of a GREAT man.*

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present ; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however disagreeable picture of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of the man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horror ; every vice than can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and embracing with the tenderness of long parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions, almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and
 the

the adventures they had met with, since they had seen each other last.

In the account given by my master, there were none but common occurrences ; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that, for the curiosity of such a character, I'll give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts, too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

' You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend,' (said the stranger to my master) ' to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you ; but because I had not arrived at any fixed period to make a proper pause at, and therefore an imperfect account could give you but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed : I am here settled in a situation, which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world, at this late season of my life. One caution only I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.—

' I was born in *France*, of poor parents, who were scarcely able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic,

' before I had experience enough to see the folly
 ' of such a step : but my stay here was not long :
 ' to a man of sense, the obligation of a vow
 ' ceases, with thu motive that induced him to
 ' take it. I made my escape from the convent,
 ' and as I was destitute of money to support me,
 ' and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the
 ' world, to be able to live without it, was driven
 ' by necessity to enlist myself for a soldier. But
 ' I soon found, that I had not gained by the
 ' change, the slavery of a soldier's life being still
 ' more intolerable than that of a monk. I there-
 ' fore had recourse to my former expedient for
 ' relief, and deserted the very first opportunity.
 ' I then threw myself at random upon the world,
 ' without any particular point to direct my
 ' course to ; but this did not discourage me : I
 ' had boldly thrown off the shackles which fool-
 ' ish man has forged for himself, to prevent his
 ' rising in life, and regulated my conduct solely
 ' by my convenience. This gave me a superio-
 ' rity over the rest of mankind, which I never
 ' failed to avail myself of. I looked upon their
 ' follies as my inheritance, and soon found abund-
 ' ant opportunities of turning them to my ad-
 ' vantage.

' For some years I lived a life of ramble, in
 ' the course of which I met with many adven-
 ' tures.—At length, I thought my own coun-
 ' try too narrow a sphere to confine my activity
 ' to, and so I went to *Spain*, where I expected
 ' an ample harvest, from the ignorance and su-
 ' perstition of the people ; but their poverty dis-
 ' appointed my hopes, and almost starved me into
 ' repentance of my expedition. However, I pro-
 ' ceeded to *Madrid*, where the credulity of a
 ' country-

countryman of my own made me amends for the reserve of the natives. He not only relieved my immediate wants, which were too pressing to be borne, but also entrusted into my hands some valuable materials for a literary work, from which he expected both reputation and profit. But I disappointed his hopes; for being tired of *Spain*, I took the first opportunity of going to try my fortune in some other country, and carried all his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his confidence. I had before experienced the inconvenience of depending upon charity, in a country where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of nature. I therefore thought it proper to take all the money and valuable effects in his possession to defray the expences of my journey. As to the distress this might throw him into, I never regarded that a moment, no more than I did his being my countryman. I despised the narrowness of thought that made such accidental circumstances of any weight, when they clashed with my own particular designs; and I esteemed the lesson I had taught him, to be more cautious whom he placed his confidence in, a sufficient recompence for his loss.

From *Spain* I directed my course to *Germany*, where the political knowledge I acquired from my late friend's papers, made me so much taken notice of, that after some time not disagreeably spent among the great, I was recommended to the prime minister and favourite of the king of *Poland*, as a proper person to be intrusted with the education of his only son. Not to disgrace this character, I assumed a

‘ fictitious name and title, and gave out that I
 ‘ had been obliged to leave my own country for
 ‘ an affair of honour. My employment gave
 ‘ me frequent opportunities of conversing with
 ‘ the father of my pupil, to whom I displayed
 ‘ my skill in politicks to such advantage, that
 ‘ I soon was admitted into his esteem and confidence. In this intercourse I had the honour of
 ‘ starting the first hint of that project, which has
 ‘ since kindled the present war in *Germany*, and
 ‘ will immortalize his name (for he has had the
 ‘ ungenerous meanness to assume it to himself)
 ‘ to all ages.

‘ Such a situation was sufficient to satisfy the
 ‘ desires of any other man; but my ambition
 ‘ knew no bounds: I thought my patron did not
 ‘ reward my merit as it deserved; and in revenge
 ‘ I resolved to work his ruin. For this purpose,
 ‘ I entered into a correspondence with several
 ‘ noblemen, who were his enemies, and taking
 ‘ advantage of the opportunities his confidence
 ‘ gave me of seeing his papers, copied some, and
 ‘ counterfeited others, that I thought necessary to
 ‘ my design, which was no less than to raise a
 ‘ civil war, in which the minister should be sacrificed, and the master dethroned. But just
 ‘ as my plot was ripe for execution, it was discovered, and I hurried from a palace to a prison, where I was condemned to languish out the
 ‘ rest of my days; my life being spared in compliance with a delicacy of my patron’s, who
 ‘ thought it would be a disgrace to him to have
 ‘ his son’s tutor hanged.

‘ When I had lain here some time, an happy
 ‘ thought procured me my liberty. I wrote a
 ‘ most penitential letter to the Pope’s nuncio, in
 ‘ which

‘ which I discovered my true name, and my having fled from my vows; and pretending a thorough sense of my guilt, and desire of returning to my order, begg’d his intercession in my favour. My scheme succeeded! He claimed me as an ecclesiastic, and the king, whose mind was too intent on greater matters to think of me, readily complied. I was accordingly released from my prison; but instead of being set absolutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was sent under a guard of ecclesiasticks to *Rome*, where all the favour I could obtain, was to be ordered back to my convent.

‘ This was a great disappointment to me; but I was obliged to submit. I accordingly set out, guarded as before, but determined to take the first opportunity of making my escape; which I at length effected, after many vain attempts.

‘ To frustrate the pursuit of my guards, I fled into *Switzerland*, where the name of liberty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I pleased. The first thing I did there was to abjure my religion, and profess their’s, to conciliate their good opinion. This was no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon all religions with equal indifference. As I had no money, I immediately commenced author. But though I gained reputation, my profits were so inconsiderable, that I was obliged to have recourse to other methods for my support, some of which happening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to leave their dominions with circumstances of disgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind when I tell you, that the affair they made so great a noise

‘ about, was only my denying a debt which I
 ‘ was unable to pay, and the creditor did not even
 ‘ want.

‘ There were some other particulars indeed of
 ‘ my conduct, which would have met with a se-
 ‘ vere fate, had I not taken prudent care to ob-
 ‘ viate it. I had entered into an intimacy with
 ‘ a person of some fortune, who had an agree-
 ‘ able wife. The connections of the wife are
 ‘ always made with a view to some particular
 ‘ end. I had more than one in this acquaint-
 ‘ ance: the supply of my necessities, by the ge-
 ‘ nerosity of the husband, and the gratification
 ‘ of my pleasure, by the enjoyment of the wife.
 ‘ — I succeeded in both; but was prevented
 ‘ by an accident from enjoying my success long.
 ‘ The husband surprized us one day, in a situa-
 ‘ tion that did not admit of doubt. He drew
 ‘ his sword, to have revenged his wrongs with
 ‘ my death; but I disappointed his design, by
 ‘ presenting a pistol at his head, which I always
 ‘ carried about me, for fear of accidents. Upon
 ‘ this, he ran out of the house in a kind of
 ‘ frenzy. I saw the delicacy of my situation,
 ‘ and that my safety depended upon the proper
 ‘ use of that moment. The wife had swooned
 ‘ away at the first sight of her husband. I ran
 ‘ and fetched a glass of water, as it to recover
 ‘ her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which
 ‘ I never went without, for any such emer-
 ‘ gency, that delivered her for ever from all fear
 ‘ of her husband’s resentment. I had many rea-
 ‘ sons for doing this. It was in her power to
 ‘ make discoveries to her husband, which I did
 ‘ not chuse; beside, as the suspicion of her death
 ‘ would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that

‘ a good way to escape his revenge. I then
‘ quitted the house, without being perceived. All
‘ things happened as I could wish. The husband
‘ was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid
‘ an ignominious death, for the murder of his
‘ wife ; and all his effects were confiscated to the
‘ state. It is true, I did not entirely escape sus-
‘ picion ! He had laid open all he knew of the
‘ affair, by letter, to his friends ; but though they
‘ believed him, he had no evidence to support his
‘ charge, so that I despised his impotent accusa-
‘ tions.

‘ From *Switzerland* I once more turned my
‘ face to *Germany*, where my name was so fam-
‘ ous for my political knowledge, that a war
‘ being just ready to break out, I received con-
‘ siderable offers, from most of the parties con-
‘ cerned, to engage me in their service ; but
‘ though I refused none, I resolved not to engage
‘ myself absolutely, to any, till I could know
‘ which might prove most advantageous to me.’



C H A P. XVII.

Continued: He comes to ENGLAND, where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities, in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.

‘ **A** S *England* was likely to bear a considerable part in the war, I thought it proper to go over, and sound the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country have long made it be esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities, in so fertile a soil, inspired me with an ardour I had never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as the oracle of the people, and the terrour of the ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence, with a pension, that should enable me to spend the rest of my days, wherever I liked, with dignity and ease.

‘ Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in *London*, where I soon found that just as the notion I had formed of the people in general might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them, and treated me and my proposals with equal contempt. This threw me into the necessity of prostituting the
‘ abilities,

abilities, which I fondly hoped would have been employed in embroiling nations, to the deception of individuals, for the support of life; for all the wealth I was master of, consisted solely in the projects of my brain.

My success in this under-plot made me some amends for the miscarriage of the other. I no sooner fixed my habitation, than I was crouded to by tradesmen of all kinds, to solicit my custom, for things which I had not the least probability of being ever able to pay for. But that gave me no concern; I accepted their offers, to such an amount, that I was immediately able to procure considerable sums of money, for other occasions, by the sale of commodities, which so far from having occasion for, I scarcely knew the use of.

Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all reserve, and gave a loose to every passion which luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm; never reflecting, that the day would soon come when my inability to pay my present debts would not only put a stop to these artificial resources, but also probably plunge me, in the horrors of a goal, for life. I professed myself a man of pleasure! I dressed, gamed, and intrigued, with people of the first rank; and for some time was so intoxicated as to forget my first purpose in coming over, and think I could support this life for ever. Not that I was ever so intent upon my pleasures, as to miss any opportunity of procuring the means, immediately necessary to obtain them. On the contrary, the moment I threw off my designs upon the government,

‘ I doubled my application, to turn the follies of
 ‘ particulars to my own advantage, stopping at
 ‘ nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of
 ‘ the world, to accomplish my designs.

‘ Such a life must necessarily involve me in a
 ‘ variety of adventures, many of which, ’tis
 ‘ true, I got not so smoothly over as I could
 ‘ wish; but I had learned philosophy enough
 ‘ to take the bad, with the good, without re-
 ‘ pining, at what it was not in my power to
 ‘ redress.

‘ It would be endless to enter into a particular
 ‘ detail of every thing I did, and suffered, in the
 ‘ course of this life; I shall, therefore, only just
 ‘ mention one or two affairs, which may serve to
 ‘ give you some notion of the rest.

‘ As I particularly valued myself upon my li-
 ‘ terary character, there was no kind of acquaint-
 ‘ ance I was fonder of cultivating, than with
 ‘ men of letters; for which I had also a farther
 ‘ motive, that as their attention to books generally
 ‘ made them strangers to the ways of men, they
 ‘ were most easy to be made the property of any
 ‘ mercenary designs.

‘ On both these accounts I had taken lodg-
 ‘ ings, in the house of a clergyman, who beside
 ‘ the character of a man of learning, was also
 ‘ reputed to be in good circumstances. I soon
 ‘ found that he was a person exactly fitted for
 ‘ my designs, and therefore lost no time in mak-
 ‘ ing a proper impression on him. The first
 ‘ step towards acquiring confidence, is to place it
 ‘ yourself. I immediately made him my banker,
 ‘ lodging every sum of money I won at play, or
 ‘ raised by the means I mentioned before, in his
 ‘ hands,

‘ hands. As my success made these sums very
‘ considerable at first, he conceived an opinion of
‘ my being a person of consequence and fortune,
‘ above my appearance. This inspired him with
‘ such respect for me, that if at any time I even
‘ hinted an occasion for more than I had in his
‘ hands, he not only offered to supply me, but
‘ even looked upon my acceptance as an honour.
‘ To confirm him in this way of thinking, I fre-
‘ quently accepted of his offers, when I had no
‘ occasion, only that the punctuality of my pay-
‘ ment might make him still the readier, when-
‘ ever I should.

‘ Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail
‘ myself of this scheme. A bad run at play strip-
‘ ped me of all my money, and my tradesmen
‘ brought in their bills, so that my former re-
‘ sources were at an end. In this difficulty I
‘ applied to my landlord, who readily supplied
‘ me with all the money in his possession; and
‘ that not being sufficient, borrowed as much
‘ more as he could, till my remittances should
‘ arrive, from my estate.

‘ His supply might have extricated me from
‘ the difficulties of the present moment. But I
‘ was awake from my golden dreams, and saw
‘ that this was the last money I could any ways
‘ expect to raise, as my practices began to be
‘ suspected, and every body had taken the alarm
‘ against me; so that if I parted with it, I
‘ should only gain a momentary relief, as my
‘ landlord would soon expect to be paid also. I
‘ therefore resolved to serve all my creditors
‘ alike, and go back to *Germany*, with the money
‘ in my possession, leaving them to curse their
‘ credulity,

‘ credulity, and be more cautious for the future.

‘ As I had still a considerable quantity of valuable effects in my possession, I knew it would be impossible to remove them, without giving the alarm to my landlord, and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far short of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma, my ready genius prompted a scheme, that would not only secure me from him, but also gave me time to prepare for my decampment with more convenience. Upon my first coming to his house, I had contrived, by taking the impressions in wax, to get false keys to all his locks. This is a piece of precaution, which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my scheme, the morning after I received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away, by appointment, I took the opportunity, while he was at church, to convey into his closet several things of value, my property in which I could clearly prove, taking away, at the same time, the obligations which I had given him for the money he had lent me, which his confidence in my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to.

‘ As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath of my being robbed of a large sum of money and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had left in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord, and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him often coming out of my
‘ apart.

‘ apartments in evident confusion, and at times,
‘ when my being absent deprived him of every
‘ honest reason of going into them; and this
‘ charge I had confirmed by the testimony of my
‘ valet de chambre, and another person, whom I
‘ had prepared properly.

‘ Though the execution of sentence is not
‘ quite so sudden in *England* as in *Turkey*, an ac-
‘ cusation of this kind, however groundless, is in
‘ many respects, not much less dreadful; the
‘ harpies of the law never losing their hold of the
‘ accused, till they have devoured every thing
‘ in his possession. The warrant I demanded was
‘ readily granted, for this reason; and away I
‘ resolutely went, in company with the officers,
‘ to execute it. We found my landlord, in the
‘ security of innocence, in his parlour, waiting
‘ for my coming in to dinner. It is impossible
‘ to express his astonishment, when they laid
‘ hold of him; like a thief, and told him it was
‘ on my accusation. All the resolution, and pre-
‘ sence of mind I was master of, were requisite
‘ to bear me through the scene! At first he was
‘ unable to speak a word, which the candour of
‘ his accusers did not fail to construe into a silent
‘ acknowledgment of his guilt; but recovering
‘ himself in a few moments, he first raised his
‘ eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon
‘ me, gave me a look that almost froze the
‘ blood in my veins; but never deigned to speak
‘ a word to me.

‘ He then addressed himself to the officers, and
‘ mildly desired that they would execute their
‘ duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the
‘ sacred character he bore, till a proof of his
‘ guilt

‘ guilt should make him appear unworthy of the
 ‘ sanction of it.

‘ Such behaviour had an effect not to be de-
 ‘ scribed, upon all that were present. The very
 ‘ officers forgot their hardened nature for a mo-
 ‘ ment, and the tear of pity fell from eyes, that
 ‘ never wept before at human misery. Even I
 ‘ began to feel the foolish infection, and was
 ‘ obliged to charm up other passions to prevent
 ‘ my betraying myself, though my ruin was at
 ‘ stake. Accordingly, I raised my voice, and
 ‘ with a stern accent, commanded the officers
 ‘ to do their duty, and search the house, before
 ‘ his accomplices should have time to convey
 ‘ away the things we came in quest of. This
 ‘ word put an end to a compassion that was
 ‘ contrary to their nature, and they proceeded
 ‘ to their business with their usual keenness;
 ‘ though still with respect, till they came to
 ‘ search his closet, where the sight of things,
 ‘ which I had sworn to have been stolen from
 ‘ me, appeared so plain a proof of his guilt, that
 ‘ they treated him with all the indignity of the
 ‘ vilest malefactor.

‘ Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto pre-
 ‘ served a steadiness of temper, that seemed supe-
 ‘ rior to the power of fortune; but at this sight,
 ‘ his resolution failed him. He fell upon his
 ‘ knees, and raising his hands and eyes to heaven,
 ‘ “Just God (said he) thy will be done! Thou
 ‘ “knowest my innocence, and art able to defend
 ‘ “me! — And wilt defend me,” — (said he)
 ‘ rising and recovering his former spirits.

‘ In the mean time, I seemed encouraged by
 ‘ this success, to hope for the recovery of the
 ‘ money, which I pretended to have lost also,
 ‘ and

and ceased not to urge the officers to make the strictest search. But this was not necessary; they ransacked every place, and tossed about every thing that was too large for them to convey away, till they made his whole house one scene of desolation. They then dragged him before the magistrate, where the finding of the things gave such weight to the charge, which I positively swore against him. that he was on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it not been for some unlucky prevarication in my valet de chambre's evidence. This, with some suspicions that were suggested against my own character, by the pawn-broker, to whom I had sold the goods I took up from my tradesmen, and who unfortunately happened to be present, gave the affair such a turn in his favour. that he was admitted to bail, till his innocence, or guilt, should be proved by a public trial.

But it was far from my intention to wait for this. The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the house of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered my effects to be removed before, where I resolved to prepare for my departure, with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told them the story of my having been robbed the day before by my landlord; and therefore that they must wait till I should receive another remittance from my own country; and though I saw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me, that indulgence; I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend

‘ friend was in a place, privileged from the immediate power of the law.

‘ However, it was impossible to be easy in such a situation, where every eye that saw me reproached me with what I had done ! I therefore took the first opportunity of going off, in which I was so successful, as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to *Holland*, where I had the vexation to learn that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without trial, for want of my appearing to prosecute him ; but though he escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent, and had procured for me ; and the expence and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge to the savages of *America*, from the power of his more savage creditors.’



C H A P. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and suffers a second ship-wrack, in ENGLAND. He that will not when he may, &c. ——— It is often better to play a poor game, than stand out. CHRYSAL arrives in LISBON.

‘ I NO sooner arrived in *Holland*, the general rendezvous of politicians, than I reassumed that character once more, and that with such success, that the minister of a power in alliance

‘ liance with *England*, conceived such an opinion
‘ of my abilities, as made him offer to recommend
‘ me to that court, for an employment of the
‘ highest consequence, in one of the principal
‘ courts of *Germany*.

‘ Though I was sensible that my return to
‘ *England* must be attended with disagreeable,
‘ if not dangerous circumstances, from the ge-
‘ neral prejudices that were entertained there
‘ against me, I boldly resolved to accept of his
‘ offer: the former, which could consist only in
‘ impotent marks of dislike, I disregarded; and
‘ the latter, I judged my recommendation would
‘ enable me to defeat. Accordingly I set out,
‘ with the utmost privacy, and was safe in *Lon-*
‘ *don*, before my leaving *Holland* was even sus-
‘ pected by those, who would have lain in wait
‘ for me.

‘ The very morning after my arrival I waited
‘ upon the minister, to whom I was recommended,
‘ with my letters, who received me very po-
‘ litely, and upon the credit of the character gi-
‘ ven to him of me, entered into a familiar con-
‘ versation on several subjects of intricacy and
‘ importance, in which I supported the character
‘ he had received of me, so well, that he dis-
‘ missed me, with an assurance of his protection
‘ and favour.

‘ I now thought myself secure of my hopes:
‘ but the pleasure of this thought was of a very
‘ short continuance. The very next morning I
‘ received a message from the minister to attend
‘ him directly, which you may think I obeyed
‘ in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability,
‘ with which I expected to be received, upon
‘ my advancing to him, he darted a look at me,
‘ that

' that seemed designed to search my very soul.
 ' After viewing me steadily thus, for some mo-
 ' ments, " You are recommended to me (said
 ' he) as a man of abilities; and such I have
 ' found you to be; but you have imposed upon
 ' the person who recommended you, and con-
 ' cealed your real character from him, or he
 ' would never have entertained so favourable an
 ' opinion of such an abandoned wretch!——
 ' But I have unravelled the mystery of your ini-
 ' quities, and am guarded against your wiles.—
 ' Your crimes call loud for vengeance, and the
 ' stroke of fate hangs over your head: but in
 ' hopes you may repent, and amend your life,
 ' and in respect to the recommendation you
 ' brought (of which I cannot give a stronger tes-
 ' timony than this) I will give you an oppor-
 ' tunity to escape, for this time, the ruin that
 ' threatens you. Fly this country directly! If
 ' you are found in this city an hour hence, or
 ' make the least delay, in any part of the king-
 ' dom, (and all your steps are watched) you are
 ' to expect no favour or protection. And that
 ' you should not plead inability to obey this in-
 ' junction, take this purse of gold, and let me
 ' never see your face more.'

' I need not tell you the effect this speech had
 ' upon me! I took the purse, and retired with-
 ' out making any reply; nor did I close my eyes
 ' in sleep, till I had bid adieu to that inhospitable
 ' shore.

' On my return, I went to wait upon my for-
 ' mer patron, but was denied admission, and
 ' ordered never to go there any more: the ac-
 ' count of my disgrace in *England* having, as

‘ I learned afterwards, been transmitted to him
‘ in the very ship that brought me over.

‘ Though these miscarriages mortified my pride,
‘ they did not deject my spirit. The gold, given
‘ me by the *English* minister, enabled me to sup-
‘ port myself, in a state of independance, for
‘ some time; during which I successively offered
‘ to accept every proposal that I had formerly re-
‘ jected; but I had missed my opportunity, and
‘ was now rejected myself, in my turn. At length,
‘ when I was almost reduced to despair, the em-
‘ ployment I hold here was offered to me, which,
‘ though far beneath my former hopes, I thought
‘ it not prudent to refuse, especially as it opened
‘ me an opportunity of venting my rage, with
‘ impunity, upon all who had ever offended me.
‘ I am literally hired to wage open war, with
‘ truth, honour, and justice, by inventing false
‘ news, to support the exhausted spirits of the
‘ people; — by defaming the enemies of my
‘ employers, to give a colour to the iniquitous
‘ designs of the latter; and by varnishing over
‘ the most flagrant acts of oppression, cruelty,
‘ and deceit, with the specious colours of autho-
‘ rity, justice, and religion.

‘ To a man, who retained any of the prejudices
‘ of the world, and did not examine things in the
‘ simplicity of nature, such a task must be most
‘ disagreeable. But to me, all things are indif-
‘ ferent, as I know all things are alike.’

Here my master’s friend concluded his history;
the enormity of which would prevent it’s obtain-
ing credit, had it been related by any body but
himself, though, as I have told you before, I have
omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the
colours of the rest.

In

264 C H R Y S A L : Or, the

In a few days after this interview my master left *Brussels*, and proceeded on his journey to *Lisbon*, during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.



C H A P. XIX.

CHRYSA L comes, at LISBON, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt, without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. CHRYSA L's master is at length taken up, and he changes his service.

IF I was formerly surprized at meeting a *Peruvian* acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no less so, when I found that the person to whom he sent me in *Lisbon* was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account, in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man chosen for *the great attempt*, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair, having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders which were brought along with me, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of *the design*. Accordingly the blow was struck a few nights after, but in the confusion, inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The

The king was shot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love-assignation, at some distance from his palace, by my master, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuss, loaded with small balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an instantaneous stupefaction of fear, which is often taken for resolution, and presence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and spoke not a word, which made my master conclude the work done, and so prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confusion the next morning, when he found that the king, though severely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was lost, nor was it probable, that another should offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, so far safe, that no one could endanger his safety by betraying him, there being no person there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for secrets of this importance are always entrusted to as few as possible.

While he thus calmly looked on, as an unconcerned spectator, it is impossible to describe the distraction that reigned all over the city, where every person suspected his neighbour, and was almost afraid to converse with his brother, for fear of being suspected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the person guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the most mysterious silence was observed, and all conversation on the subject discouraged. This was thought to be the most probable way of coming to the knowledge of so dark an affair; as their spies could thereby mix with the people with less suspicion, and make their observations with the

greater certainty, when they should be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loss to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was struck was the difficulty to find out, that so they might found their proceedings on an evidence of justice, for the Jesuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reason for suspecting them of this fact was, that upon the miscarriage of their premature attempt in *America*, the king was so incensed against the whole society, that he dismissed them from the direction of his conscience, and every other place and employment about his person and court.

Such an indignity he was sensible must alarm the resentment of a set of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts, he had therefore taken every precaution to guard against them as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only against disturbances in the state, for of such an attempt as this he could not suspect them.

While things hung in this suspense, I had an opportunity of seeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to describe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add, poverty, pride, superstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present *Portuguese*. A people of whom it is hard to say, whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their follies and vices is so unremitted and so strong.

A little before I arrived there the city had been reduced to ashes by lightning, and before they had recovered from the consternation which such a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being swallowed by an earthquake.

Such signal instances of the wrath of heaven might have been expected to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it, in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or I should rather say of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was to attribute these misfortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whose good-nature had given effectual relief to their distresses.

At length, after a calm so long, that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the whole nation beside.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The person with whom he had been was descended from the first, and related or allied to all the greatest families in his kingdom.

In a country, whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all those families seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly a rumour of her being with child having extorted some inadvertent, illative, general menaces from some of her relations, as the fact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the

king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination; the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed, on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses he had suffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected; they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations and strained inferences of those who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such scenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I shall therefore return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair, the miscarriage of his attempt having made it unnecessary for him to disburse the money, among which I came to him, and
by

by that means continued me so long in his possession.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion, my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been to see him, an unconcerned spectator of the sufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their punishment.

But his triumph was not long; secret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, such information of them as confirmed, by a multitude of facts, not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and justice to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmost severity. A step, that could not have been taken on such grounds, while these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to strike at the root of ecclesiastical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke, under which they had so long blindly groaned, that at length, they thought it just and natural.

Accordingly, in the midst of his security, my master was seized, and hurried away to a prison, with the rest of his brethren; and all his papers and effects secured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little use, as it is an invariable rule with all the *order*, never to keep any by them, whose discovery may endanger them, or their designs; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this dissipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who in his search, took an opportunity

to secrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquisition with a banker, for fear of detection.



C H A P. XX.

CHRYSAL meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest **AMINADAB**. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at LISBON, in which **CHRYSA**L suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. **CHRYSA**L enters into a new service.

I Was scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his counting-house, the sight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprize of my master less: 'O, God of Abraham, (said he) is not that the son of my brother *Aminadab*? 'Where hast thou been? And where is thy father? He has been sought from *Dan to Beersheba*! His spoiling that gentile, that *Egyptian* woman, has been a joy to all the brethren! but 'I am amazed to see thee here; I hope he is safe out of the reach of every Christian power.'

'O, brother of my father, (replied the son of *Aminadab*) mention not that unhappy affair, 'if thou hast not a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with grief. My father is dead!'— 'But where is the wealth, nephew,' (interrupted my

my master hastily) ‘where is the wealth?’ —
 ‘All lost! all buried with him in the bottom of
 the ocean!’ (replied the nephew.) — ‘All lost!
 The wealth all lost! O my brother! O Aminadab
 my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of
 Jerusalem, there fell not such a misfortune on our
 tribe! The wealth all lost! O Aminadab my
 brother! my brother!’ — ‘Alas, my father, I
 faint through weariness, weakness, and hun-
 ger; I have not eaten bread this day; let us
 retire into the inner chamber, and when my
 soul is refreshed with a morsel of bread, and a
 drop of water, I will put ashes on my head,
 and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole
 unhappy story to thee.’

The repast was literally what he had asked;
 and as soon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab*
 and his uncle seated on the floor together,
 in the posture of mourning, the former proceed-
 ed thus.

‘By the letters which my father wrote to thee
 from *England*, in the sacred cypher of our fa-
 mily, thou wer’t informed of his intended re-
 turn into his native land of *Africa*, and invited
 to meet him at *Tetuan*, and share in his for-
 tune. This he told me while we were upon
 our voyage; but thy better angel prevented
 thee, and saved thee the labour and loss of such
 a journey in vain.

‘The ship on board which we unfortunately
 embarked was a *Dutchman*, bound for the coast
 of *Italy*, but was to land us at *Gibraltar*, from
 whence we knew we could get an immediate
 passage over. But behold, when we were just
 in view of the port; when the sight of his na-
 tive land made the soul of my father rejoice,

‘ and we thought of nothing but safety and content, a *Sallee* rover gave chase to our ship. The *Dutch* captain immediately crowded all the sail he could to escape ; but the wind dying away, and the pirate gaining upon us with his oars, he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told him that we were all ruined, for he had neglected to bring a pass.

‘ This news was like a clap of thunder to my father, who too well knew the consequence of their finding such a mass of wealth in his possession !’ ‘ *Wretch that I am, (exclaimed he) why did I venture with one of thy sordid nation ? slaves to MAMMON, who would hazard liberty and fortune to save such a trifle.*’ ‘ Then turning about and going into his cabin, he stood some moments, as if lost in thought, when bursting into an extatick rage, he snatched up the coffer, in which his gold and jewels were, from under the head of his bed, and embracing it eagerly, ‘ *I have gained thee, (said he) I have earned thee with anxiety and toil ; and I will not lose thee now ! — O Jonas, send thy whale to receive me, and bear me to the land of my fathers. I will not be a laughing-stock to the Gentiles, nor a bye-word in my father’s house.*’ —— ‘ Saying which words he rushed upon the deck, and before any person could possibly prevent him, he plunged into the sea, with the coffer in his arms, and was never seen more.

‘ While all stood amazed at his rashness, the heavens, as if appeased with a sacrifice, immediately sent a wind, that filled our fluttering sails, and soon bore the ship, delivered thus of its *Jonas*, out of the reach of the enemies. You may better conceive than I can describe
‘ the

‘ the situation I was in at this event: I prostrated
‘ myself on the shore when we landed at *Gibral-*
‘ *tar*, and bewailed my misfortune with tears
‘ and lamentations. But this afforded no relief
‘ to my distress; and something I must do, to
‘ earn a morsel of bread. I therefore sold all my
‘ superfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our
‘ money was in the coffer, and with these did I
‘ purchase some eggs and fruits, which I sold
‘ again in the garrison, to support my life, till I
‘ should have an opportunity of coming to thee,
‘ my father, for advice and assistance in this dis-
‘ tress; and now behold these four ducats are
‘ become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is
‘ all my worldly wealth.’

The uncle covered his face with his hands,
and remained silent some time. At length he
spoke to his nephew, in these words: ‘ It is in
‘ vain, O son of my brother, to mourn for what
‘ is not to be remedied; holy *David* wept no
‘ longer for his child after he was dead: let us
‘ therefore arise and think of something that
‘ may, if not relieve thy mighty loss, at least
‘ administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast
‘ been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening
‘ the weight, without effacing the image, on the
‘ golden coins of these idolaters. This was the
‘ first rise of thy father, who began the world as
‘ poor as thou art now; till his unwearied in-
‘ dustry in this practice raised him from want.
‘ Follow thou therefore his example; and may
‘ the God of thy fathers give thee the same suc-
‘ cess, but with an happier blessing than he
‘ found.

‘ And lo! fortunately it has happened, that
‘ I have this very hour received a large quantity :

‘ of the coin of *Britain*, all new from the mint.
 ‘ On that therefore thou mayest begin thine en-
 ‘ deavours, and the fourth part of the produce of
 ‘ this labour shall be thine: I was just going to
 ‘ have sent for another, who always works for
 ‘ me, for a fifth; but I am willing to give thee a
 ‘ profit extraordinary to encourage thee.

‘ Thine earnings in this business will soon
 ‘ produce thee a considerable sum, with which
 ‘ thou may’st go privately to *London*, and pur-
 ‘ chase old cloaths, which will bring great profit
 ‘ in *Germany*, as soon as this war shall be at an
 ‘ end.

‘ Till thou art able to provide for thyself thou
 ‘ may’st eat bread here, and sleep under the sha-
 ‘ dow of my roof: be not dejected; *honest* in-
 ‘ dustry never fails of success.’

The young *Aminadab* was no sooner introduced thus into a way of *honest* industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I fell one of the first sacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; so that from a thousand of us, who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets which could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of imposition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleasure; but, alas, vain boast! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial with all the marks of age, and infirmity so strong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myself and my companions to a number

of *British* soldiers, just come from *Soup Maigre* and straw, in a *French* prison.—In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be sent to *England*, against whom this trade was mostly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the disgrace of such diminishing. But before I could be sent off, an accident happened in the family of my master, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in *Lisbon*.

I have told you that in secret he was a Jew, though the prospect of gain made him profess Christianity, in despite of the horrors of the inquisition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made such profession, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no sooner had his gains, in his art of diminishing, restored him a little to his spirits, than thinking his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient beside, to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandize did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house; and having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaism*, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that when he should be seized, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands; as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he com-

forted himself with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

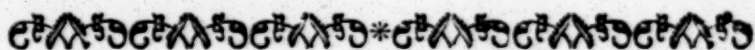
This is a crime never forgiven in any state. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not less cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquisition.

Of all the human sufferings I had yet seen, except in the case of the *sacrificers*, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my service of course, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which I was delivered the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew. — I have before given you my sentiments on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the instance of the *human passover* of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if possible, more absurd under the Christian dispensation than any other, as beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of Christianity do every where clearly and expressly command brotherly love, tenderness, and compassion, forbidding every appearance

appearance of cruelty, under the severest denunciations of wrath.

But there has been so much, and that so well said, on this subject already ; and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal, is so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.



CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON and ILISSA.

THE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of a most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the *Portuguese*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which shewed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus, ‘Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt.’ — ‘I told thee before, O judge of the
‘ faith.

' faith of Christians, (replied the prisoner, with
 ' a composed look and determined voice) I told
 ' thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am
 ' not conscious of any thing that should incur
 ' the censure of this tribunal: nor shall all the
 ' tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can
 ' inflict upon this wretched body, make me lie
 ' against mine immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt
 ' to which I am a stranger. But tell me of
 ' what I am accused, and my conscience shall
 ' direct my lips to answer thee the truth. Perhaps
 ' I may unwittingly have erred; thou knowest
 ' that I have not always professed the Christian
 ' faith, according to the laws established here:
 ' pardon then the errors of mine ignorance, and
 ' instruct me to avoid the like for the future.
 ' And, O I adjure thee by thy Christian faith,
 ' to relieve my heart from the anxiety that tears
 ' it, for the fate of my daughter! O, let me
 ' know'——

His adjuration was broken off at these words
 by the officers of the court; and his answer not
 being satisfactory, he was remanded back to pri-
 son, without any farther questions, with the
 strongest menaces of severity; though in secret
 the judge ordered him to be treated with tender-
 ness and respect, and supplied with every comfort
 and convenience of life, that could mitigate the
 horrors of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and changing his
 judicial robes for a more convenient and splendid
 dress, retired to his own apartments, where, af-
 ter the respectful ceremony of sending to desire
 admission, he went into a particular chamber, in
 which was a young female, whom he approached
 with all the timid tenderness of love. ' I have
 ' seen

‘ seen thy father, my dearest *Ilissa*, (said he) and
‘ he is well ; nor shall any human means be want-
‘ ing to preserve him so.’

‘ Why then may I not see him ? (replied the
‘ lady :) how can I trust thy words, who hast al-
‘ ready deceived me ?’ — ‘ Thou knowest, my
‘ love, (returned he) that thy request is impos-
‘ sible ; and if I have deceived thee, by pro-
‘ mising compliance with it, it was only to calm
‘ the transports of thy passion, that in a cooler
‘ moment thou mightest hearken to the voice of
‘ love and happiness.’ — ‘ *Mention not happiness to*
‘ *me in this place ! Can happiness be without li-*
‘ *berty ? Is a prison the proper scene for love ?*
‘ *But I will be deceived no longer ! I will see my*
‘ *father, or I will not live. Grant me this re-*
‘ *quest, and expect my gratitude. Thou knowest*
‘ *that for myself I fear not thy power ! thou knowest*
‘ *that immediate death is ever in my reach ; trifle*
‘ *not therefore with me any longer ; restore me to*
‘ *my father ; restore us both to liberty ; and then,*
‘ *then only, speak to me of love.*’ — ‘ Thou hast
‘ conquered, my *Ilissa*, thou hast conquered !
‘ Your father shall be restored to you ; and we
‘ will all fly together to thy native land, where
‘ we shall live in happiness : but this cannot be
‘ compassed on a sudden ; it will require both
‘ time and address to secure our retreat. But
‘ when I have done this for my *Ilissa*, can I be
‘ sure of her love ! Will her heart return the sa-
‘ crifice I make ?’ — ‘ *I have told thee that my*
‘ *heart is grateful ; I tell thee now it is not in-*
‘ *sensible to softer passions : urge me no farther ;*
‘ *when I am freed from this prison, and my father*
‘ *is present to give the sanction of his authority to*
‘ *my actions, I promise thee to become thy wife.*
‘ *And*

‘ *And my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promise, at the altar.*’

These words raised my master’s heart into an extasy ; he prostrated himself at her feet, he kissed her hand, and swore eternal love.

The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness ; in the prospect of which, their unequal years seemed to raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen : her beauty, though very great, was rather majestic than soft ; different from the *Bohemian* lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an awful distance, and the flash of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of his life, and far from disagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it ; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of my heart, that evening my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return.

The lady refused not his request, but at giving it, desired that he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the *spirit of the golden case*. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and
summoning,

summoning, by our sympathetic impulse, the spirit I wanted, I *shewed* him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a *look* which signified these words — ‘ There is something so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons who have raised your curiosity, that it will be necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the satisfaction you desire.

‘ The father of the young lady, who gave me to our master, is the person whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abissinia*, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

‘ From the first dawn of reason in the mind of *Pheron*, he shewed the strongest desire for knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances of human knowledge have not been so great in those countries as here; yet natural reason has been able to discover the sublime truths of morality, the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time consumed here in fruitless speculation devoted to it; by which means, if men are not so knowing, they are certainly more wise.—In this happy employment passed the first years of the youth of *Pheron*, till riper manhood calling him to the service of his country, he went at the head of his father’s vassals, to repel the invasions of the *Ethiopians*.

‘ His success was so great in this first essay of his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but also carried the war into their own country, where, after many victories, he compelled them to sue for peace.

‘ The

‘ The fame of his actions soon reached the ear
 ‘ of his sovereign, who sent for him to his court,
 ‘ and rewarded his services, by giving him his
 ‘ sister in marriage. Dignities in those countries
 ‘ are not prostituted to the support of luxury and
 ‘ idleness. *Pheron* returned home with his bride,
 ‘ to govern and protect his people, who, safe in
 ‘ his care, pursued their usual occupations; war
 ‘ not being made there a constant profession, nor
 ‘ the gratification of the worst passions of human
 ‘ nature reduced into a science, and practised by
 ‘ rule.

‘ The peace which *Pheron* had made was not
 ‘ injurious to his enemies, and therefore was pre-
 ‘ served by them, which gave him leisure to at-
 ‘ tend to the improvement of his country, and
 ‘ instruction of his people.

‘ He had lived in this happy state some years,
 ‘ when there arrived a person in his country,
 ‘ who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs.
 ‘ The situation of those nations is such, that the
 ‘ inhabitants themselves rarely ever travel; nor is
 ‘ the face of a stranger seen in an age among
 ‘ them. This made the arrival of this man the
 ‘ more taken notice of; he was immediately in-
 ‘ troduced to *Pheron*, to whose friendship his
 ‘ knowledge in several branches of science soon
 ‘ recommended him.

‘ When the stranger had thus established an
 ‘ interest with him, he at length disclosed to him
 ‘ the motive of his coming into a country so re-
 ‘ mote from his own; he told him, that he had
 ‘ undertaken this hazardous and painful journey
 ‘ in pure obedience to the divine command of
 ‘ instructing the ignorant in the knowledge of
 ‘ salvation. He explained to him the *mysteries*
 ‘ of

• of the Christian religion; the *hierarchy* of
• *Rome*; the *divine* foundation of its power; and
• the several orders in its government, in so for-
• cible a manner, that he soon made a convert of
• him.

• *Pheron* had always adored the name of *Christ*,
• but never till now knew what it was to be a *Chri-*
• *stian*. One only book of his gospel had he
• ever seen, and from that he could understand
• no more, than that *faith in the death of Christ*
• *for the redemption of mankind, and obedience to*
• *the self-evident laws of morality, with the pious*
• *worship of the one GOD alone, was the whole re-*
• *ligion taught by him.* — It is not strange, there-
• fore, if the glorious fabrick of the church, as
• represented by this Jesuit, for such he was,
• had all the effect he could desire upon him, the
• naturally inquisitive turn of his mind making
• him listen with eagerness to every thing which
• seemed to open a new prospect to it.—Nor was
• he content with his own knowing those sublime
• doctrines: he also instructed his wife, whom
• he tenderly loved, and their example con-
• verted the greatest part of his people; for no-
• thing could prevail upon him to attempt forcing
• their assent.—But this did not satisfy him; the
• descriptions which he had heard of the learn-
• ing, piety, and glory of *Rome*, had filled his
• soul with an ardent desire to see that metropo-
• lis of the world, that he might learn its vir-
• tues, and transplant them into his own coun-
• try. He communicated this thought to his in-
• structor, who fired with the glory of such a
• proselyte, encouraged him in it, by every ar-
• gument he could use. — This determined his
• resolution to make an attempt, the hazards of
• which

284 C H R Y S A L: Or, the

‘ which would be rewarded with such happy consequences. He therefore prepared all things for his journey, in which his wife would bear him company, and also bring her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his *Helinefs*, and committing the government of his people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold to an immense value to defray the expences of his journey, he set out with a company sufficient to protect him from the dangers of travelling through such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any accident at the *Red Sea*, where he embarked on board a ship for *Alexandria*.

‘ While he waited here for a ship bound to *Italy*, the plague deprived him of his instructor and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss; but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard, and his care for his daughter made him careful for himself.—His attendants would have persuaded him to return directly home, as he had lost his guide; but the loss of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He therefore sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastic life himself at *Rome*.

‘ With this design he embarked in the first ship that sailed for *Europe*, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so fatal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but for a large sum of money, the commander engaged to land him at *Leghorn*; but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on the passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the inquisitor, who is his brother, who
‘ imme-

‘ immediately seized both *Pheron* and his daughter, for errors in their opinions, and confined them in the prisons of the *holy office*, where they have now been above a year.

‘ The first motive of this outrage was the stranger’s wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court, and which would soon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and by what you have overheard to-day, may probably prevent it entirely.’



C H A P. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an ENGLISH sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.

THE inquisitor’s heart was too full of love to let him sleep long ; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of *Ilssa*.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him ; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him ; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superior to such terrors.

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of *Pheron* ; and in the illusion of imagination,

286 C H R Y S A L : *Or, the*

gination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! my conscience is secure, and I despise your tortures.' —As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him, in his surprize, to be continued, and he proceeded thus: —'I have told thee, that thy tortures should not bend my soul to falshood; and now thou shalt find it so.'

'O father of *Iliffa*, (returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight) I come not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of comfort to thy soul! — '*Art not thou the inquisitor?*' — 'I am, O *Pheron*, and thy friend.' — '*Am I awake? is this, or was the former, but a dream? Guard me, good heaven! let me not fall from virtue!*' — 'Such virtue ever is the care of heaven! *Pheron*, behold thy friend! the proselyte of thy virtues. — The time admits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods for our obtaining happiness. Thy *Iliffa*' — '*Heaven guard my child!*' — 'Thy *Iliffa* is well, and happy in her father's welfare!' — '*O my child! my child! but shall I ever see her again?*' — 'You shall; she shall be restored to your bosom, and never torn from it more.' — '*Good, gracious judge! O, when? O, how?*' — '*My child! my child!*' — 'Suppress your joy a moment; the beauties of *Iliffa* have triumphed over the malice of her fate! she has found a lover, who offers happiness to her and you.' — '*Does my child love him? is he an honest man?*' — 'His life will prove him such! he offers to restore you and your *Iliffa* to liberty, and to accompany you both to your native country, for there can be no safety in
Europe

‘ *Europe* for you, after you leave this place ; your
‘ escape from whence, and every circumstance
‘ relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor
‘ will he demand the reward his heart pants for,
‘ till your safety shall remove every fear, every
‘ doubt of his sincerity.’

‘ *O name the generous man !*’ — ‘ Behold him
‘ at your feet ! receive me for your son.’ —
‘ *Thee ! the inquisitor ! who threatened me with*
‘ *torture !*’ — ‘ But treated thee with tenderness,
‘ treated *Ilissa* with respect.’ — ‘ *Make me know*
‘ *that !*’ — ‘ I ask no favour but on that con-
‘ dition ; if I procure liberty for you and your
‘ *Ilissa* ; if I restore you to your native land, and
‘ accompany you thither ; if your *Ilissa* acknow-
‘ ledges the services of my love, and asks your
‘ consent to reward them, will you confirm my
‘ bliss, and own me for your son ?’ — ‘ *I*
‘ *will, and thank kind heaven that gives me such a*
‘ *son.*’

Saying this, he embraced my master, who in a few words let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to prosecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquisition, there was confined an *English* seaman, who had been seized and secretly conveyed thither for some disrespectful expressions against the *divinity of Saint Dominick*.

The manly, modest resolution, with which he had refused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor as the person proper for his design ; for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his brother,

ther, whose treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As soon as he opened the door of his cell, the sailor, whose soreness prevented his sleeping very sound, perceived him, and imagining it was a summons to a repetition of the torture, he sprung up, as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, '*Hollo! who comes there!*'——The inquisitor advancing, answered, '*A friend.*'——'*Aye! damn all such friends,* (replied the sailor) '*I suppose you come to give me another roasting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd send you off with a salt cel for your supper.*'

'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to set you free if you desire, and will deserve it.'——'*Awast baling, brother! I do not understand you!*'——'Why, do not you desire to be free?'——'Desire! aye! that I do! but I may whistle for that wind long enough, before it will blow.'——'Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you imagine! What would you do to be free?' '*Do? I'd burn the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor's throat! I'd do any thing, but turn papist, or fight against Old England.*'——'Honest Briton! but suppose I should set you free, would you serve me faithfully in one thing, that is neither against your country nor your religion?'——'Belay that, and I'll warrant you; if I say it, I'll do it, without more words. I am no landsman, nor Portuguese.'——'Well then, I'll take your word, and so come with me.'——— I he sailor was so surprized he scarce knew whether he was asleep or awake; however, as soon as the inquisitor had unlocked his

his chains, he shrugged his shoulders, and followed him, without more questions.

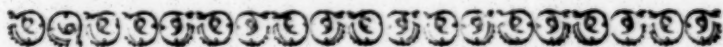
When they were come into my master's apartment, he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some wine to chear his spirits, ' You are
' now at liberty, my friend, (said he) without
' any farther condition, and may go where you
' please; but if you will serve me in an affair I
' shall mention to you, you shall have reason to
' think of this night with pleasure as long as you
' live.'—' Serve you, master! (replied the sailor)
' that I will! name but what you would have
' me do; that is, as I said before; you under-
' stand me; and I'll do it, though it was to
' hand the main top-gallant sail, in a storm, at
' midnight, when the yard was broke in the
' flings, and it was not my watch; for if it was a
' man's watch, do you see, it would be but his
' duty; and there is no merit in a man's doing
' his duty; I am no flincher; I never say Aye
' when I mean No: though I say it I am a gentle-
' man; my father was lieutenant of a man of
' war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty
' years man and boy, and never was once brought
' to the gang-way in all that time. If the noble
' captain that rated me a midshipman twenty years
' ago, had lived to be an admiral, I should have
' been an officer before now.'

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to *London*, buy a good ship, and freight her for *Alexandria*, and to call at *Lisbon* in his way, and take my master

and his friends aboard, to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in *London*, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when on a sudden thought, he turned short on the inquisitor; ‘Steady, (said he) steady; so far we go right before the wind, and all’s well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? if it is the *Pretender*, or the *French* king, here, take back your *trinkams*; I’ll be damn’d before I’ll help either of them to make his escape.’——‘Never fear, my friend, (replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter at the strangeness of such a thought) I promise you it is neither of these; I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.’——‘But shall we not have one dash at this damned place? (added the sailor) shall we not set it on fire, and cut the inquisitor’s throat? I’ll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulph of hell, to have a stroke at *Devil Dominick*; shall we not set the inquisition on fire, and cut the inquisitor’s throat?’——‘We will consider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you, not to be seen in *Lisbon* at present, and to be as expeditious as possible in your return.’——‘Never fear, master; never fear,’ replied the sailor, and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here quitted the service of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.



C H A P. XXIII.

The sailor goes to LONDON, buys a ship, and returns to LISBON, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a FRENCH ship. He lands his passengers at ALEXANDRIA, returns home and marries. CHRYSAL quits his service.

MY new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hasted away to the sea side, without ever stopping to look behind him, and luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he was out of sight of *Lisbon* before morning.

Never was an heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his; he thought of nothing else all the passage, and the moment he arrived in *London* he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for *Lisbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for young *Aminada's* had made such depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my master's honour would not think of parting with me for less, without acquainting the person from whom he had received me. — The moment he arrived

in *Lisbon*, he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures, which he designed to take with him, conveyed secretly aboard, and as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends, in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his dissatisfaction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the inquisition, and *cutting the inquisitor's throat*.

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, sending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impossible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of the voyage, which met but one cloud, that seemed at first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, *owner*, you shall now see what *English* boys can do: there is a large *Frenchman* bearing down upon us, but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along side of us; and as I expected some such thing, I took a letter of marque, so that you need not fear being hanged for a pyrate, if the worst should happen.'

But delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially

especially his *owner*, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure, which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming toward them, the inquisitor went into the cabbin that he should not be observed by the men, and sending for my master, accosted him thus; ‘Surely, my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that ship, (for we were *lying-to*) the certainly means to attack you.’ — ‘And so let her, *owner*, (replied my master) I’ll warrant she gets as good as she brings.’ — ‘But consider, my friend; (returned the inquisitor) consider we are on board you.’ — ‘Well, *owner*, and what then; you are not afraid: the lady may be stowed safe below; and you’ll stand as good a chance as another; you are not afraid.’ — ‘My good friend, I have not time now to explain my reasons to you; but if you have any regard for me, you will instantly croud all the sail you can, and get clear of this affair; I desire it; I beg it.’ — ‘Why look you, *owner*, what needs all these words? if so be, you order us, we must put about to be sure, for the ship is your’s; but then the honour of Old England, consider that; the honour of Old England.’ — ‘O my friend, I can consider nothing but my desire to avoid this danger; so once more I beg’ --- ‘Enough said, enough said.’ Then going upon the deck, ‘Well, my lads, our *owner* does not chuse this brush, while the lady is on board; so we must about ship: but as we come back, *Scup Maigre* shall pay for it.’ --- And saying this, he obeyed the desire of his *owner* as faithfully as if it had

O 3

been

been his own, only not with the same appearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculating *damn fear*, at every turn of the tune he whistled as he walked the deck the rest of that day.

He had so punctually observed his *owner's* instructions, in getting a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the *Frenchman*; nor did we meet with any thing disagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good humour, my master addressed his *owner* thus : — ‘ Now, *owner*, while the
 ‘ sky is clear, and we have nothing else to do,
 ‘ I had better give you an account of your money. Here is the log-book, which you may
 ‘ over-haul at your leisure, though the sooner
 ‘ the better. This is the time; there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may happen by and bye; you’ll find all as fair as a new cable: but I must give you one point to direct
 ‘ your reckoning by, and that is this; you bade
 ‘ me buy a ship, and freight her, and so forth, and she and the cargo should be my own, after
 ‘ I have done your job this trip. Now, *owner*,
 ‘ it is very true that a less vessel than this might
 ‘ have made the run; but then you seemed so
 ‘ desirous to be safe, that I thought it best to take
 ‘ a bargain in this stout ship, which I knew to
 ‘ be as good a sea boat as ever turned to windward, and able to go, hank for hank, with
 ‘ any thing that swims the sea, as we shewed
 ‘ when we run the *Frenchman* out of sight yesterday, though it went against my heart to do
 ‘ it; but no matter for that now; the ship is
 ‘ yours, and you have a right to be obeyed.
 ‘ However, there is the account, and here is the
 ‘ rest

‘ rest of your money, of which I did not lay out
 ‘ a shilling that I could avoid, but one guinea,
 ‘ which I gave *Will Crisfree*, to *repair his rig-*
 ‘ *ging*, and one I gave *Black Moll* of *Wapping* to
 ‘ *heave down*; and I could not well avoid those
 ‘ either, for *Will* was an old mess-mate, and I
 ‘ owed *Moll* for many a good turn in her way;
 ‘ but all this signifies nothing to you; they can
 ‘ be stopped in account; and here is a damned
 ‘ guinea too, that would not go; I believe it
 ‘ has been in the hospital, till it was *fixxed* off
 ‘ its legs.

‘ And now, *owner*, as you may think this
 ‘ ship cost too much, and that the cargo is too
 ‘ good; I will not keep you to your bargain;
 ‘ she is your own and all that is in her, only
 ‘ pay the men; as for me I am satisfied with
 ‘ having got out of that damned inquisition, and
 ‘ leave the rest to yourself. If you think that I
 ‘ have deserved any thing, well and good; if
 ‘ not, I do not fear bread, while the sea flows
 ‘ round *old England*: all that grieves me is, that
 ‘ you would not let us set fire to the inquisition,
 ‘ and cut the inquisitor’s throat.’ — If my mas-
 ‘ ter’s bluntness in the affair of the *French* ship,
 ‘ gave offence to his *owner*, the honesty of this
 ‘ speech restored him to his warmest esteem; and
 ‘ made *Pheron*, who was present, cry out in a rap-
 ‘ ture, ‘ Thank heaven there is still some honesty
 ‘ among mankind.’ — ‘ Honesty! aye, (replied
 ‘ my master) a little among the tars of *Old Eng-*
 ‘ *land*! a little.’

The inquisitor having, by this time, recover-
 ed from the astonishment, into which such no-
 bleness of soul threw him, returned the account
 unopened

296 C H R Y S A L : Or, the

unopened with these words, ' I am convinced
 ' your account must be just; and I freely make
 ' you a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they
 ' are justly your own already, but of the rest of
 ' the money which is in your hands.' — ' *What,*
 ' *all, owner! all!* ' — All, my friend; if it
 ' were many times so much you justly merit it.'
 — ' *But then, Owner, had not you better sign the*
 ' *account if you please, for fear of after reckonings*
 ' *with your executors; for I hate the law damn-*
 ' *ably, ever since I lost a year's pay for hindring*
 ' *our boatwain's mate's brother to beat his wife.*
 ' *The brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so*
 ' *I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault*
 ' *that set her on. Damn all lawyers, say I.* ' —
 ' Well then, my honest, worthy friend, there
 ' is a receipt; and I wish you success equal to
 ' your merit; and you cannot have more.' —
 ' *Enough said, owner; enough said: I thank you;*
 ' *I thank you.*'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they soon set out for *Phoen's* country, and at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which he assured them were not better than *bumboats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a *Thames* water-man.

Having finished this, his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at *Gosport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared

to speak to till now, readily consented to marry

him. One thing though I must not omit, and that was, that he kept a constant *look out* all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman*, whom he had fled from so sore against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush, for the honour of *Old England*.

I did not remain with him to be a witness of his happiness; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine sleeve buttons, to present to his mistress the morning before his marriage.



C H A P. XXIV.

CHRYSALE arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.

THE diminution of my size, which had made my late master careless about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent scruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my present value, for me.

I did not remain long in his possession: he passed me off as soon as he arrived in *London*, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a division of the loss, in the purchase of old cloaths, which he was going to carry abroad.—Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces, which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of

of security, by their respective owners : but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold myſterious trade unnecessary to you.

The miſfortune of my ſize kept me a priſoner here till Saturday night, when my maſter always *puts off* his light coin, juſt before he ſhuts his ſhop, to the poor people, whoſe neceſſity requiring an immediate ſupply, for the ſupport of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and ſo muſt even bear the loſs. — Such a perſon did he think you, and accordingly gave *me* to you : but the moment I came into your poſſeſſion, and found that you were *the choſen of ten thouſand, the firſt born of ſcience*, whom wiſdom had inſtructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your purſuit, had been obliged to conſent to a revelation of her moſt *occult wiſdom*, and to entruſt you with the command *of that chain*, which links the animal and material words together ; the moment, I ſay, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greateſt pleaſure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I ſhould confer this completion of human happineſs and honour upon you ; a pleaſure that was heightened by the noble conſtancy you ſhewed, when the ſmell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's ſhop, raiſed that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you ſhould purchaſe ſome of it to ſatiſfy your hunger, or preſerve me for this laſt experiment, in which the latter was ſo gloriouſly triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived; *nature labours in the throws of the mystick birth; and lo! the philosophick king arises in all the glory of the morning!* attend to my words; receive the consummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this secret cause, you must know

*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*	*

O doleful and deplorable event; never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears. Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-check set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid stream.—The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor*, where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burden under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the *one* moment in a thousand

* See the preface,

300 C H R Y S A L : Or, &c.

years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness ; such the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

C O N C L U S I O N.

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a taylor, whose principal debtor is made a lord, a physician, whose *nostrum* is discovered, a cobbler, who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure, a poet, whose play is refused, or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament, just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction of my words, and learn wisdom from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future ; let reason curb expectation ; reduce imagination to common sense ; and bring your wishes within the bounds of your real wants : so shall industry banish necessity from your habitation, and content turn all your possessions into gold.

T H E E N D.

